



AWFUL
M

AWFUL DISCLOSURES
of
Maria Monk.



AWI

M A R

IN A NARR
DURING A
A NOVICE, AND
THE HOTEL

WITH ADD

TO WHICH
SIX MONTHS'

BY RE

"Come out of
takers of her sin
plagues."—Rev.

W. NICHOLSON
26, PATENT
AND AL

AWFUL DISCLOSURES
OF
MARIA MONK,

AS EXHIBITED

IN A NARRATIVE OF HER SUFFERINGS

DURING A RESIDENCE OF FIVE YEARS AS
A NOVICE, AND TWO YEARS AS A BLACK NUN, IN
THE HOTEL DIEU NUNNERY AT MONTREAL.

WITH ADDITIONAL INFORMATION.

TO WHICH IS ADDED, THE NUN; OR,
SIX MONTHS' RESIDENCE IN A CONVENT.

BY REBECCA THERESA REED.

"Come out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues."—Rev. xviii. 4.

LONDON:
W. NICHOLSON & SONS, LIMITED,
26, PATERNOSTER SQUARE, E.C.,
AND ALBION WORKS, WAKEFIELD.

04126

It is hoped that I suppose that it that I have desired, that the as a voluntary which are desc which she has e her past experie rior of the Hotel of the Roman Pr

My feelings are recollection of wh day I have little pleasing recollec know not what re what will be the among strangers, the truth, so far as they are general that any facts wh words whenever t the Hotel Dieu N able evidence tha fice, given in this them; for whatever changes which n tually conceal; a in that Institution

There are living speak, without fe sibly their testim confirm my staten rejoice to see at li now? or will they Superiors have se in the cells have Ray has been sile she has time to a

PREFACE.

It is hoped that the reader of the ensuing narrative will not suppose that it is a fiction, or that the scenes and persons that I have delineated, had not a real existence. It is also desired, that the author of this volume may be regarded not as a voluntary participator in the very guilty transactions which are described; but receive sympathy for the trials which she has endured, and the peculiar situation in which her past experience, and escape from the power of the Superior of the Hotel Dieu Nunnery, at Montreal, and the anares of the Roman Priests in Canada, have left her.

My feelings are frequently distressed and agitated by the recollection of what I have passed through, and by night and day I have little peace of mind, and few periods of calm and pleasing recollection. Futurity also appears uncertain. I know not what reception this little work may meet with, and what will be the effect of its publication here or in Canada, among strangers, friends, or enemies. I have given the world the truth, so far as I have gone, on subjects of which I am told they are generally ignorant; and I feel perfect confidence, that any facts which may yet be discovered, will confirm my words whenever they can be obtained. Whoever shall explore the Hotel Dieu Nunnery at Montreal, will find unquestionable evidence that the descriptions of the interior of that edifice, given in this book, were furnished by one familiar with them; for whatever alterations may be attempted, there are changes which no mason or carpenter can make and effectually conceal; and therefore there must be plentiful evidence in that Institution, of the truth of my description.

There are living witnesses, also, who ought to be made to speak, without fear of penances, tortures, and death, and possibly their testimony at some future time, may be added, to confirm my statements. There are witnesses I should greatly rejoice to see at liberty; or rather there were. Are they living now? or will they be permitted to live after the Priests and Superiors have seen this book? Perhaps the wretched nuns in the cells have already suffered for my sake—perhaps Jane Ray has been silenced for ever, or will be murdered, before she has time to add her most important testimony to mine.

But speedy death in relation only to this world, can be no great calamity to those who lead the life of a nun. The mere recollection of it always makes me miserable. It would distress the reader, should I repeat the dreams with which I am often terrified at night; for I sometimes fancy myself pursued by my worst enemies: frequently I seem as if again shut up in the Convent; often I imagine myself present at the repetition of the worst scenes that I have hinted at or described. Sometimes I stand by the secret place of interment in the cellar; sometimes I think I can hear the shrieks of the helpless females in the hands of atrocious men; and sometimes almost seem actually to look again upon the calm and placid features of St. Frances, as she appeared when surrounded by her murderers.

I cannot banish the scenes and character of this book from my memory. To me it can never appear like an amusing tale, or lose its interest and importance. The story is one which is continually before me, and must return fresh to my mind, with painful emotions, as long as I live. With time, and Christian Instruction, and the sympathy and examples of the wise and good, I hope to learn submissively to bear whatever trials are appointed me, and to improve under them all.

Impressed as I continually am with the frightful reality of the painful communications that I have made in this volume, I can only offer to all persons who may doubt or disbelieve my statements, these two things:

Permit me to go through the Hotel Dieu Nunnery, at Montreal, with some impartial ladies and gentlemen, that they may compare my account with the interior parts of the building, into which no persons but the Roman Bishop and Priests are ever admitted; and if they do not find my description true then discard me as an impostor. Bring me before a court of justice—there I am willing to meet *Latargue, Dufresne, Phelan, Bonin, and Richards*, and their wicked companions, with the Superior, and any of the nuns, before a thousand men.

MARIA MONK.

New York, January 11, 1836.

Early Life—
—Entrance
nery—Brief
Congregation
Nunnery—F
tions receive

My parents
resident in I
marriage, wh
city I have s
St. John's, w
father was an
and my moth
count every s
According
tentive to his
passage from
in after life.
him; but afte
received any
even brought
although nomi
tention to her
well of the C
churches. To
home, and my
can trace my
scenes I am no
When about

AWFUL DISCLOSURES.

CHAPTER I.

EARLY RECOLLECTIONS.

Early Life—Religious Education Neglected—First School—Entrance into the School of the Congregational Nunnery—Brief Account of the Nunneries in Montreal—The Congregational Nunnery—The Black Nunnery—The Grey Nunnery—Public Respect for these Institutions—Instructions received—The Catechism—The Bible.

My parents were both from Scotland, but had been resident in Lower Canada some time before their marriage, which took place in Montreal, and in that city I have spent most of my life. I was born at St. John's, where they lived for a short time. My father was an officer under the British Government, and my mother has enjoyed a pension on that account every since his death.

According to my earliest recollections, he was attentive to his family, and often repeated to us a passage from the Bible, which often occurred to me in after life. I may probably have been taught by him; but after his death I do not recollect to have received any instruction at home, and was not even brought up to read the Scriptures; my mother although nominally a Protestant, did not pay attention to her children. She was inclined to think well of the Catholics, and often attended their churches. To my want of religious instruction at home, and my ignorance of God and my duty, I can trace my introduction to convents, and the scenes I am now to describe.

When about six or seven years of age, I went to

school to a Mr. Workman, a Protestant, who taught in Sacrament street, and remained several months. There I learnt to read and write, and arithmetic as far as division. All the progress I ever made in those branches was in that school, as I have never improved in any of them since.

A number of girls of my acquaintance went to school to the nuns of the Congregational Nunnery, or Sisters of Charity. The schools taught by them are perhaps more numerous than my readers may imagine. Nuns are sent out from the convent to many of the towns and villages of Canada to teach small schools; and some of them as instructresses in different parts of the United States. When I was ten years old, my mother asked me one day if I should like to learn to read and write French, and I began to think seriously of attending the school in the Congregational Nunnery. I had already some knowledge of that language, sufficient to speak it a little, and my mother knew something of it.

I have a distinct recollection of my entrance into the Nunnery; the day was an important one in my life, and on it commenced my acquaintance with a convent. I was conducted by some young friends along Notre Dame street, till we reached the gate. Entering we walked some distance along the side of a building towards a chapel, until we reached a door, stopped, and rung a bell. It was opened, and entering, we proceeded through a covered passage till we took a short turn to the left, and reached the door of the school-room. On my entrance, the Superior met me, and told me that I must dip my fingers into the holy water at the door, cross myself, and say a short prayer; and

this she told
as well as Cat

There were
nuns professee
and geography
imperfect, and
the time being
work, which w
nuns had no v
management of
polished in the
un menti," (tha
God,) on the m
was poor, and t
middle of a wo
which we studie
from which we l
answers. We w
but it was only t
some other prom

It may be nec
three Convents in
plans, and gove
names are as foll
1. The Congre
Nunnery, or Conv
Grey Nunnery.

The first of thes
to the education o
needle-work, ha
and catechism; th
e., amounting to
This Convent is ad
rated from it only

this she told me was always required of Protestant as well as Catholic children.

There were about fifty girls in the school, and the nuns professed to teach reading, writing, arithmetic, and geography. The methods, however, were very imperfect, and little attention was devoted to them, the time being engrossed with lessons in needle-work, which was performed with much skill. The nuns had no very regular parts assigned them in the management of the schools. They were rather unpolished in their manners, often exclaiming, "O'est un menti," (that's a lie,) and "mon Dieu," (my God,) on the most trivial occasions. Their writing was poor, and they often put a capital letter in the middle of a word. The only book of geography which we studied, was a catechism of geography, from which we learnt by heart a few questions and answers. We were sometimes referred to a map, but it was only to point out Montreal or Quebec, or some other prominent name.

It may be necessary to mention, that there are three Convents in Montreal, founded on different plans, and governed by different rules. Their names are as follows:—

1. The Congregational Nunnery. 2. The Black Nunnery, or Convent of Sister Bourgeoise. 3. The Grey Nunnery.

The first of these professes to be devoted entirely to the education of girls. But with the exception of needle-work, hardly any thing is taught but prayer and catechism; the instruction in reading, writing, &c., amounting to very little and often to nothing. This Convent is adjacent to the Grey Nunnery separated from it only by a wall. The second professes

to be a charitable institution for the care of the sick, and the supply of bread and medicines to the poor; and something is done in charity, though but little compared with the size of the buildings, and the number of inmates.

The Grey Nunnery, situated in a distant part of the city, is a large edifice, containing departments for the care of insane persons and foundlings. With this I have less acquaintance than with the others. I have often seen two of the Grey nuns, and know their rules; they do not confine them always within their walls, like those of the Black Nunnery. These two Convents have their common names (Black and Grey) from the colours of the dresses worn by their inmates.

In these three Convents there are certain apartments into which strangers can gain admittance, but others from which they are always excluded. In all, large quantities of ornaments are made by the nuns, which are exposed for sale in the *Ornament Rooms*, and afford large pecuniary receipts every year, which contribute much to their income. The nuns of these Convents are devoted to the charitable object appropriated to each, the labour of making different articles known to be manufactured by them, and the religious observances, which occupy much of their time. They are regarded with much respect by the people at large; and when a novice takes the veil, she is supposed to retire from the temptations and troubles of this world into a state of holy seclusion, where, by prayer, self-mortification and good deeds, she prepares herself for heaven. Sometimes the Superior of a Convent obtains the character of working miracles: and when she dies

crowds thro
are to be de
things she
articles to be
virtue is tho
in such ideas
piest of wom
and delightfu
such views u
Seminary ofte
and catechise
ior of the Bla
and enlarged
ing such teach
then relating
make us ente
make us somet
ting into it.

Among the i
some of the m
Protestant Bib
evil tendency o
it many a sou
eternal punish
They could no
that would be s
God. They w
resented it as a
In confirmation
the answers tau
I will here give
Petits Catechism
but the priests s
answers, which

crowds throng the Convent, who think indulgences are to be derived from bits of her clothes and other things she has possessed; and many have sent articles to be touched by her bed or chair, in which virtue is thought to remain. I used to participate in such ideas, and looked upon a nun as the happiest of women, and a Convent as the most holy, and delightful abode. Pains were taken to impress such views upon me. Some of the priests of the Seminary often visited the Congregational Nunnery, and catechised and talked on religion. The Superior of the Black Nunnery also came into the school, and enlarged on the advantage we enjoyed in having such teachers, and dropped something now and then relating to her own convent, calculated to make us entertain the highest ideas of it, and make us sometimes think of the possibility of getting into it.

Among the instructions given us by the priests, some of the most pointed were directed against the Protestant Bible. They often enlarged upon the evil tendency of that book, and told us that but for it many a soul condemned to hell, and suffering eternal punishment might have been in happiness. They could not say anything in its favour; for that would be speaking against religion and against God. They warned us against its woe, and represented it as a thing very dangerous to our souls. In confirmation of this, they would repeat some of the answers taught us at catechism; a few of which I will here give. We had little catechisms, ("Les Petits Catechismes") put into our hands to study; but the priests soon began to teach us a new set of answers, which were not to be found in our books

from some of which I received new ideas, and got, as I thought, important light on religious subjects, which confirmed me more in my belief in the Roman Catholic doctrines. Those questions and answers I can still recall with tolerable accuracy, and some of them I will add here. I never have read them as we were taught them only by word of mouth.

“Question. Pourquoi le bon Dieu n’a pas fait tous les commandemens?”—“Response. Parce que l’homme n’est pas si fort qu’il peut garder tout ses commandemens.”

“Question. Why did not God make all the commandments?”—“Answer. Because man is not strong enough to keep them.”

And another; *“Q. Pourquoi l’homme ne lit pas l’Evangile?”—“R. Parce que l’esprit de l’homme est trop borne et trop faible pour comprendre qu’est ce que Dieu a écrit.”*

“Q. Why are men not to read the New Testament?”—“A. Because the mind of man is too limited and weak to understand what God has written.”

These questions and answers are not to be found in the common catechisms in use in Montreal and other places where I have been, but all the children in the Congregational Nunnery were taught them, and many more not found in these books.

CHAPTER II.

CONGREGATIONAL NUNNERY.

Story told by a Fellow Pupil against a Priest—Other Stories—Pretty Mary—Confess to Father Richards—My subsequent Confession—Instructions in the Catechism.

THERE was a girl thirteen years old whom I knew in the School, who resided in the neighbour-

hood of my familiar. She conducted of a p I was astonished at her full a nature, I had so much of that I could not

She was par he could not sh any thing he d yet she seemed act. A priest, man, and appo what would be so in him. S mother of it, w probation: but speak of it; an not like men, h save us, whatever

I afterwards heard the story indulging a sinf and the girl had afterwards learr treated in the sa ceedings.

Indeed it was used to me, and I right and wrong at the school, from the Lac, told me occurred recently called La Belle

hood of my mother, and with whom I had been familiar. She told me one day at school, of the conduct of a priest with her at confession, at which I was astonished. It was of so criminal and shameful a nature, I could hardly believe it, and yet I had so much confidence that she spoke the truth, that I could not discredit it.

She was partly persuaded by the priest to believe he could not sin, because he was a priest, and that any thing he did to her would sanctify her; and yet she seemed somewhat doubtful how she should act. A priest, she had been told by him, is a holy man, and appointed to a holy office, and therefore what would be wicked in other men, could not be so in him. She told me she had informed her mother of it, who expressed no anger nor disapprobation: but only enjoined it upon her not to speak of it; and remarked to her as priests were not like men, but holy and sent to instruct and save us, whatever they did was right.

I afterwards confessed to the priest that I had heard the story and had a penance to perform for indulging a sinful curiosity in making inquiries; and the girl had another for communicating it. I afterwards learned that other children had been treated in the same manner, and also of similar proceedings.

Indeed it was not long before such language was used to me, and I well remember how my views of right and wrong were shaken by it. Another girl at the school, from a place above Montreal, called the Lac, told me the following story of what had occurred recently in that vicinity. A young squaw, called La Belle Marie, (pretty Mary,) had been

seen going to confession at the house of the priest, who lived a little out of the village. La Belle Marie was afterwards missed, and her murdered body was found in the river. A knife was also found bearing the priest's name. Great indignation was excited among the Indians, and the priest immediately absconded, and was never heard from. A note was found on his table addressed to him, telling him to fly, if he was guilty.

It was supposed that the priest was fearful that his conduct might be betrayed by this young female ; and he undertook to clear himself by killing her.

These stories struck me with surprise at first, but I gradually began to feel differently, even supposing them true, and to look upon the priests as men incapable of sin ; besides, when I first went to confession, which I did to Father Richards in the old French church, since taken down, I heard nothing improper ; and it was not until I had been several times that the priests became more and more bold, and were at length indecent in their questions, and even in their conduct when I confessed to them in the Sacristie. This subject, I believe, is not understood nor suspected among Protestants ; and it is not my intention to speak of it very particularly, because it is impossible to do so without saying things both shameful and demoralizing.

I will only say here, that when quite a child, I heard from the mouths of the priests at confession, what I cannot repeat, with treatment corresponding ; and several females in Canada have assured me that they have repeatedly, and indeed regularly, been required to answer the same and other like questions, many of which present to the mind deeds

which the most
hardly invent.

There was a
school of the
pursued in
nuns who came
frequently called
ble reason. Th
of the country
towns with whic
Sisters of Ch
States. Among
Patrick, an old
forty, very ign
with quite a bea
disagreeable. S
sewing, and was
We were allowe
in the Congrega
not considered o

In the Black
Congregational,
the city ; and s
such as were in
sured. I was on
few days.

There were be
physician attende
celled nuns of th
ime there.

These would a
repeat prayers to
After I had bee
two years, I left

which the most iniquitous and corrupt heart could hardly invent.

There was a frequent change of teachers in the school of the Nunnery, and no regular system was pursued in our instruction. There were many nuns who came and went while I was there, being frequently called in and out without any perceptible reason. They supply school teachers to many of the country towns, usually two to each of the towns with which I was acquainted, besides sending Sisters of Charity to many parts of the United States. Among those whom I saw most was Saint Patrick, an old woman for a nun, that is about forty, very ignorant and gross in her manners, with quite a beard on her face, and very cross and disagreeable. She was sometimes our teacher in sewing, and was appointed to keep order among us. We were allowed to enter only a few of the rooms in the Congregational Nunnery, although it was not considered one of the secluded Convents.

In the Black Nunnery, which is very near the Congregational, is an hospital for sick people from the city; and sometimes some of our boarders, such as were indisposed, were sent there to be cured. I was once taken ill, and sent there for a few days.

There were beds enough for a number more. A physician attended it daily, and a number of the veiled nuns of that Convent spend most of their time there.

These would also sometimes read lectures and repeat prayers to us.

After I had been in the Congregational Nunnery two years, I left it, and attended several schools

a short time. But I soon became dissatisfied, having many severe trials to endure at home, which my feelings will not allow me to describe; and as my Catholic acquaintances had often spoken to me in favour of their faith, I was inclined to believe it although I knew little of any religion. If I had known anything of true religion I believe I should never have thought of becoming a nun.

CHAPTER III.

BLACK NUNNERY.

Preparations to become a Novice in the Black Nunnery—Entrance—Occupations of the Novices—The apartments to which they had access—First interview with Jane Bay—Reverence for the Superior—A wonderful Nun—Her Reliques—The Holy Good Shepherd, or Nameless Nun—Confession of Novices.

At length I determined to become a Black Nun, and called upon one of the oldest priests in the Seminary, to whom I made known my intention.

The old priest was Father Rocque. He is still alive. He was at that time the oldest priest in the Seminary, and carried the Bon Dieu, Good God, as the Sacramental wafer is called. When going to administer it in any country place, he used to ride with a man before him, who rang a bell as a signal. When the Canadians heard it, whose habitations he passed, they would prostrate themselves to the earth, worshipping it as God. He was a man of great age, and wore large curls, so that he somewhat resembled his predecessor, Father Roue. He was at that time at the head of the Seminary. This institution is a large edifice, situated near the

Congregation east side of N vous and cent Montreal, and as the Three charge of the hundred and fifty at Montreal, and larger ones.

Father Rocque Superior of the again in two w Seminary again of the Black N make inquiries, answer, and pro few days at the Lawrence suburb during which time family, particularly who was a devotee for the Superior.

On Saturday n into the Black N satisfaction, for I ent, secluded, a rom the world an nured of everlasting superior received om, where the n ostulantes, were cupation of sewi Here were about rouns in different

Congregational and Black Nunneries, being on the east side of Notre Dame street. It is the rendezvous and centre of all the priests in the district of Montreal, and supplies all the country as far down as the Three Rivers, which place, is under the charge of the Seminary of Quebec. About one hundred and fifty priests are connected with that at Montreal, as every small place has one priest, and larger ones have two.

Father Rocque promised to converse with the Superior of the Convent, and proposed my calling again in two weeks, at which time I visited the Seminary again, and was introduced to the Superior of the Black Nunnery. She told me she must make inquiries, before she could give me a decided answer, and proposed to me to take up my abode a few days at the house of a French family in St. Lawrence suburbs. Here I remained a fortnight; during which time I formed acquaintance with the family, particularly with the mistress of the house, who was a devoted Papist, and had a high respect for the Superior.

On Saturday morning I called, and was admitted into the Black Nunnery as a novice, much to my satisfaction, for I had a high idea of life in a convent, secluded, as I supposed the inmates to be, from the world and all its evil influences, and assured of everlasting happiness in heaven. The Superior received me, and conducted me into a large room, where the novices, who are called in French postulantes, were assembled, and engaged in the occupation of sewing.

Here were about forty of them, and they were in groups in different parts of the room, near the win-

dows: but in each group was one of the veiled nuns of the convent, whose abode was in the interior apartments, to which no novice was admitted. As we entered, the Superior informed them that a new novice had come, and desired any present who might have known me in the world to signify it.

Two Miss Feagnees, and a Miss Howard from Vermont, who had been my fellow-pupils in the Congregational Nunnery, immediately recognized me. I was then placed in one of the groups at a distance from them, and furnished by a nun, called Sainte Clotilde, with materials to make a purse, such as priests use to carry the consecrated wafer in, when they administer the sacrament to the sick. I well remember my feelings at that time, sitting among a number of strangers, and expecting with painful anxiety the arrival of the dinner-hour. Then, as I knew, ceremonies were to be performed, for which I was but ill prepared, as I had not yet heard the rules by which I was to be governed, and knew nothing of the forms to be repeated in the daily exercises, except the creed in Latin. This was during the time of recreation, as it is called. The only recreation there allowed, is that of the mind, and of this but little. We were kept at work, and permitted to speak with each other only in hearing of the old nuns. We proceeded to dinner in couples, and ate in silence while a lecture was read.

The novices had access to only eight of the apartments; and whatever else we wished to know, we could only conjecture. The sleeping room was in the second story, at the end of the western wing. The beds were placed in rows, without curtains or anything else, to obstruct the view; and

in one corner which was the old nun approached each side of which she could see. Her bed was a lamp which showed she had no light to receive whether she knew that the would expose companions, in another's fault felt myself und I disliked, and of what I was I soon learned pass, which were in their observance kinds of work a beautiful specimen I saw, was a room which had been the Convent, and This was sent as an expression received from the yards in length, of the Grey Nuns government, though not for several years I was sitting by named Jane M'Co

in one corner was a small room partitioned off, in which was the bed of the night-watch, that is, the old nun appointed to oversee us for the night. In each side of the partition were two holes, through which she could look upon us when she pleased. Her bed was a little raised above the others. There was a lamp hung in the middle of our chamber, which showed everything to her distinctly; and as she had no light in her room, we never could perceive whether she was awake or asleep. As we knew that the slightest deviation from the rules would expose us to her observation and that of our companions, in whom it was a virtue to betray one another's faults, as well as to confess our own, I felt myself under a continual exposure to suffer what I disliked, and had my mind occupied in thinking of what I was to do next, and what I must avoid. I soon learned the rules and ceremonies we had to pass, which were many, and we had to be particular in their observance, we were employed in different kinds of work while I was a novice. The most beautiful specimen of the nun's manufacture which I saw, was a rich carpet made of fine worsted, which had been begun before my acquaintance with the Convent, and was finished while I was there. This was sent as a present to the King of England, as an expression of gratitude for the money annually received from the government. It was about forty yards in length, and very handsome. The Convent of the Grey Nuns has also received funds from the government, though on some account or other, had not for several years.

I was sitting by a window at one time with a girl named Jane M'Coy, when one of the old nuns came

up and spoke to us in a tone of liveliness and kindness, which seemed strange in a place where every thing appeared so cold and reserved. Some remarks which she made were intended to cheer and encourage me, and made me think she felt some interest in me. I do not recollect what she said, but I remember it gave me pleasure. I also remember that her manners struck me singularly. She was rather old for a nun, probably thirty; her figure large, her face wrinkled, and her dress careless. She seemed also to be under less restraint than the others, and this I afterwards found was the case. She sometimes even set the rules at defiance. She would speak aloud when silence was required, and sometimes walk about when she ought to have kept her place: she would even say and do things on purpose to make us laugh, and, although often blamed for her conduct, had her offences frequently passed over, when others would have been punished with penances.

I learnt that this woman had always been singular. She never would consent to take a saint's name on receiving the veil, and had always been known by her own, which was Jane Ray. Her irregularities were found to be numerous, and penances were of so little use in governing her, that she was pitied by some, who thought her partially insane. She was, commonly spoken of as mad Jane Ray; and when she committed a fault, it was often apologized for by the Superior or other nuns, on the ground that she did not know what she did.

The occupations of a novice in the Black Nunnery are not such as some may suppose. They are not employed in studying the higher branches of

education: their minds not taught much less a knowledge. in work and year I studied work but veers in French commit to mention of them admitted as a

Among the ed in the Con of a gay young ed to me one which I first l pression upon

The daughter was passing th ing, on her w denly thrown and received a and removed soon into the terminated to jo being required (which usually and is abridged arly exemplary take the veil wi to a priest to be ing of this expr and already in

education: nor offered any advantages for storing their minds, or polishing their manners; they are not taught even reading, writing, or arithmetic; much less any of the more advanced branches of knowledge. My time was chiefly employed, at first, in work and prayers. It is true, during the last year I studied a great deal, and was required to work but very little; but it was the study of prayers in French and Latin, which I had merely to commit to memory, to prepare for the easy repetition of them on my reception, and after I should be admitted as a nun.

Among the wonderful events which had happened in the Convent, that of the sudden conversion of a gay young lady of the city into a nun appeared to me one of the most remarkable. The story which I first heard while a novice, made a deep impression upon my mind. It was nearly as follows:

The daughter of a wealthy citizen of Montreal was passing the church of Bon Secours one evening, on her way to a ball, when she was suddenly thrown down upon the steps or near the door, and received a severe shock. She was taken up, and removed first, I think, into the church, but soon into the Black Nunnery, which she soon determined to join as a nun; instead, however, of being required to pass through a long novitiate, (which usually occupies about two years and a half, and is abridged only where the character is peculiarly exemplary and devout,) she was permitted to take the veil without delay, being declared by God to a priest to be in a state of sanctity. The meaning of this expression is, that she was a real saint, and already in a great measure raised above the

world and its influences, and incapable of sinning; possessing the power of intercession, and a proper object to be addressed in prayer. This remarkable individual, I was further informed, was still in the Convent, though I never was allowed to see her; she did not mingle with the other nuns, either at work, worship or meals; for she had no need of food, and not only her soul, but her body, was in heaven a great part of her time. What added, if possible, to the reverence and mysterious awe with which I thought of her, was the fact I learned, that she had no name. The titles used in speaking of her were, the holy saint, reverend mother, or saint bon pasteur, (the holy good shepherd.)

It is wonderful that we could have carried our reverence for the Superior so far as we did, although it was the direct tendency of many instructions and regulations, indeed of the whole system, to permit, even to foster, a superstitious regard for her. One of us was occasionally called into her room to cut her nails, or dress her hair; and we would often collect the clippings, and distribute them to each other, or preserve them with the utmost care. I once picked up all her stray hairs I could find after combing her head, bound them together, and kept them until she told me I was not worthy to possess things so sacred. Jane M'Coy and I were once sent to alter a dress for the Superior. I gathered up all the bits of thread, made a little bag, and put them into it for safe preservation. This I wore a long time round my neck, so long, that I wore out a number of strings, which I had replaced with new ones. I believed it to possess the power of removing pain, and often prayed to it to cure the tooth-

ache, &c. I was all in devotion up the feather would distribute, relics would better supply would treat it into ridicule appear, when from her Superior face, which made us half-tivity, she would able vision turning round do not understand." And the different in E agony for fear say she expected days.

While I was had gone to though the n the building, through the confess in the church we had a chapel sessionals, we

Our confession performed in confess at a p knees near the repeated a num

ache, &c. Jane Ray sometimes professed to outgo us all in devotion to the Superior, and would pick up the feathers after making her bed. These she would distribute among us, saying, "When she dies, relics will begin to grow scarce, and you had better supply yourselves in season." Then she would treat the whole matter in some way to turn it into ridicule. Equally contradictory would she appear, when occasionally she would obtain leave from her Superior to tell her dream. With a serious face, which sometimes imposed upon all of us, and made us half believe she was in a perfect state of sanctity, she would narrate in French some unaccountable vision which she said she had enjoyed; then turning round, would say, "There are some who do not understand me; you all ought to be informed." And then she would say something totally different in English, which put us to the greatest agony for fear of laughing. Sometimes she would say she expected to be Superior herself one of these days.

While I was in the Congregational Nunnery, I had gone to the parish church, to confess, for although the nuns had a private confession-room in the building, the boarders were taken in parties through the streets, by some of the nuns, to confess in the church; but in the Black Nunnery, as we had a chapel, and priests attending in the confessionals, we never left the building,

Our confessions there as novices were always performed in one way. Those of us who were to confess at a particular time, took our places on our knees near the confession-box, and, after having repeated a number of prayers, &c., prescribed in our

book, came up one at a time and kneeled beside a fine wooden lattice work, which entirely separated the confessor from us, yet permitted us to place our faces almost to his ear, and nearly concealed his countenance from our view. I recollect how the priests used to recline their heads on one side, and often cover their faces with their handkerchiefs, while they heard me confess my sins, and put questions to me, which were often of the most improper and revolting nature, naming crimes both unthought of and inhuman. Still, strange as it may seem, I was persuaded to believe that all this was their duty, or that it was done without sin.

Veiled nuns would often appear in the chapel at confession; though, as I understood, they generally confessed in private. Of the plan of their confession-rooms I had no information; but I supposed the ceremony to be conducted much on the same plan as in the chapel viz., with a lattice interposed between the confessor and the confessing.

Punishments were sometimes resorted to while I was a novice, though but seldom. The first time I ever saw a gag, was one day when a young novice had done something to offend the Superior. This girl I always had compassion for, because she was very young, and an orphan. The Superior sent for a gag, and expressed her regret at being compelled, by the bad conduct of the child, to proceed to such a punishment; after which she put it into her mouth, so far as to keep it open, and then let it remain some time before she took it out. There was a leathern strap fastened to each end, and buckled to the back part of the head.

Displeased with
Denis—Relics—
Objections made

After I had
the time I com
day I was treat
which displeas
resentment, I w
being satisfied w
the command, n
Superior treated
went at once, w
There would ha
ture, novice as I
on; but I was
that, and went h

I soon after vi
I saw two young
been acquainted
school-mate at M
conversation with
lady who kept a
ne to apply to her
teacher; for she
nent school in th

I visited her, an
aged at once as I

The government
he was obliged to
might have fifteen
scholars more, and
g to the regulati
ceased for the

CHAPTER. IV.

Displeased with the Convent—Left it—Residence at St. Denis—Relics—Marriage—Return to the Black Nunnery—Objections made by some Novices.

After I had been a novice four or five years, from the time I commenced school in the Convent, one day I was treated by one of the nuns in a manner which displeased me, and because I expressed some resentment, I was required to beg her pardon. Not being satisfied with this, although I complied with the command, nor with the coldness with which the Superior treated me, I determined to quit the Convent at once, which I did without asking leave. There would have been no obstacle to my departure, novice as I then was, if I had asked permission; but I was too much displeased to wait for that, and went home without speaking to any one.

I soon after visited the Town of St. Denis where I saw two young ladies with whom I had formerly been acquainted in Montreal, and one of them a school-mate at Mr. Workman's School. After some conversation with me, and learning that I had known a lady who kept a school in the place, they advised me to apply to her to be employed as her assistant teacher; for she was then instructing the government school in that place.

I visited her, and found her willing, and I engaged at once as her assistant.

The government society paid her £20 a year: she was obliged to teach ten children gratuitously; might have fifteen pence a month, for each ten scholars more, and then she was at liberty, according to the regulations, to demand as much as she pleased for the other pupils. The course of

instruction required by the society embraced only reading, writing, and what was called ciphering. The books used were a spelling book, l' Instruction de la Jeunesse, the Catholic New Testament, and l' Histoire de Canada. When these had been read through, in regular succession, the children were dismissed as having completed their education. No difficulty is found in making the common French Canadians content with such an amount of instruction as this; on the contrary, it is often found very hard indeed to prevail upon them to send their children at all, for they say it takes too much of the love of God from them to send them to school. The teacher strictly complied with the requisition of the society, and the Roman Catholic catechism was regularly taught in the school, as much from choice, as from submission to authority, as she was a strict Catholic. I had brought with me the little bag in which I had so long kept the clippings of the thread left after making a dress for the Superior. Such was my regard for it, that I continued to wear it constantly round my neck, and to feel the same reverence for it as before. I occasionally had the tooth-ache during my stay at St. Denis, and then always relied on the influence of my little bag. On such occasions I would say—"By the virtue of this bag may I be delivered from the tooth-ache!" and I supposed that when it ceased it was owing to that cause.

While engaged in this manner I became acquainted with a man who soon proposed marriage; and young and ignorant of the world as I was, I heard his offers with favour. On consulting with my friend, she expressed a friendly interest for me, and

advised me again. As I knew so little, the report was circulated. Unfortunately, I received her advice, and had occasion to see the report proved, and indeed required to be seen in St. Denis. I found myself thus situated, and determined to leave my former intention. Should I gain admission, the Superior would be absent, before I could go, and I had no one with whom I could go. I went to Montreal to say to the Lacrosse, for protection during my further inquiry; now I had been advised to return to the city, I visited the Superior, and desired her advice.

After leaving the Superior, she told me that the Superior was contented, and I was free for leaving the city. I thought to be ever grateful for her care of me, and requested that I should be treated with respect and not with ridicule.

only
ring.
ction
and I'
read
were
ation.
rench
strue-
very
r chil-
of the
school.
equi-
cate-
much
ity, as
with me
e clip-
for the
I con-
and to
I occu-
at St
nce of
say-
d from
ceased
quaint
; and
hear
with me
me, as

rised me against taking such a step, and especially as I knew so little about the man, except that a report was circulated unfavourable to his character. Unfortunately, I was not wise enough to listen to her advice, and hastily married. In a few weeks I had occasion to repent of the step-I had taken, as the report proved true which I thought justified, and indeed required, our separation. After I had been in St. Denis about three months, finding myself thus situated, and not knowing what else to do, I determined to return to the Convent, and pursue my former intention of becoming a Black Nun, should I gain admittance. Knowing the inquiries the Superior would make relative to me during my absence, before leaving St. Denis I agreed with the lady with whom I had been associated (when she went to Montreal, which she did very frequently) to say to the Lady Superior I had been under her protection during my absence, which would stop further inquiry; as I was sensible, should they know I had been married I should not be admitted. I soon returned to Montreal, and, on reaching the city, I visited the Seminary, and in another interview with the Superior communicated my wish, and desired her to procure my re-admission as a novice.

After leaving for a short time, she returned and told me that the Superior of the Convent had consented, and I was introduced to her. She blamed me for leaving the nunnery, but told me that I ought to be ever grateful to my guardian angel for taking care of me, and bringing me in safety back. I requested that I might be secured against the reproaches and ridicule of all the novices and nuns,

which I thought some might cast upon me, unless prohibited by the Superior; and this she promised me. The money usually required for the admission of novices had not been expected from me. I had been admitted the first time without any such requisition; but now I choose to pay for my re-admission. I knew that she was able to dispense with such a demand, and she knew that I was not in possession of any thing like the sum required.

But I was bent on paying to the Nunnery, and accustomed to receive the doctrine often repeated to me before that time, that when the advantage of the church was consulted, the steps taken were justifiable, let them be what they would; I therefore resolved to obtain money on false pretences, confident that if all were known, I should be free from displeasing the Superior. I went to the brigade-major, and asked him to give me the money payable to my mother from her pension, which amounted to about thirty dollars, and without questioning my authority to receive it in her name he gave it me.

From several of her friends I obtained small sums under the name of loans, so that altogether I had soon raised a number of pounds, with which I hastened to the Nunnery, and deposited a part in the hands of the Superior. She received the money with evident satisfaction, though she must have known that I could not have obtained it honestly; and I was at once re-admitted as a novice.

Much to my gratification, not a word fell from the lips of my old associates in relation to my unceremonious departure, nor my voluntary return.

The Superior's explicitly laid down, fully obeyed, for that subject during, except that sometimes say a

There were not a while as novices with some things but a short time. machine, named the Convent with such an antipathies expressions which

The first day dinner with us in all, "What a gainst his best friend

All stared at some one enquire

"I say" she against him who suppose that if the priests?"

This bold young, and in the arms from the Superior. It happened that a Bible which he trapped round some in the city. determined to command, which I soon learnt in the Bible

The Superior's orders, I had not a doubt, had been explicitly laid down, and they certainly were carefully obeyed, for I never heard an allusion made to that subject during my subsequent stay in the Convent, except that, when alone, the Superior would sometimes say a little about it.

There were numbers of young ladies who entered awhile as novices, and became weary or disgusted with some things they observed, and remained but a short time. One of my cousins, who lived at a machine, named Reed, spent about a fortnight in the Convent with me. She however, conceived such an antipathy to the priests, that she used expressions which offended the Superior.

The first day that she attended mass, while at dinner with us in full community, she said before us all, "What a rascal that priest was, to preach against his best friend!"

All stared at such an unusual exclamation, and some one enquired what she meant.

"I say" she continued, "he has been preaching against him who has given him his bread. Do you suppose that if there were no devil, there would be any priests?"

This bold young novice was immediately dismissed, and in the afternoon we had a long sermon from the Superior on the subject.

It happened that I one day got a leaf of an English Bible which had been brought into the Convent, wrapped round some sewing silk, purchased at a store in the city. For some reason or other, I determined to commit to memory a chapter it contained, which I soon did. It is the only chapter I ever learnt in the Bible, and I can now repeat it. It is

the second of St. Matthew's gospel. "Now when Jesus was born at Bethlehem of Judea," &c. It happened that I was observed reading the paper, and when the nature of it was discovered, I was condemned to do penance for my offence.

Great dislike to the Bible was shown by those who conversed with me about it, and several have remarked to me that if it were not for that book, Catholics would never be led to renounce their own faith.

I have heard passages read from the *Evangelile*, relating to the death of Christ; the conversion of Paul; a few chapters from St. Matthew, and perhaps a few others. The priests would also sometimes take a verse or two, and preach from it. I have read St. Peter's life; but only in the book called the "*Lives of the Saints*." He, I understood, has the keys of heaven and hell, and has founded our church. As for Saint Paul, I remember, as I was taught to understand it, that he was once a great persecutor of the Roman *Catholics*, until he became convicted, and confessed to one of the *father confessors*, I don't know which. For who can expect to be forgiven, who does not become a Catholic, and confess?

CHAPTER V.

Received Confirmation—Painful Feelings—Specimens of Instructions received on the Subject.

THE day on which I received Confirmation was a distressing one to me. I believed the doctrine of the Roman Catholics, and according to them I was guilty of three mortal sins; concealing something at confession, sacrilege, in putting the body of Christ in the sacrament under my feet, and by receiving it

while not in a state of grace, and being introduced into all those things, which I had never before experienced. I have cut me off from the world.

On the day when I was confirmed with a new name, from the reproach of my former life, as I had been baptized, I was appointed with the oil of the forehead, and dyed with the blood of Christ. I would go down to hell, if I had been rubbed with the oil of the forehead, and dyed with the blood of Christ, which the devils would use to make me the worse for it. While I was sitting in the oil, I felt the Holy Spirit come to my heart, and her doctrine of grace would absolve me from my death; and before leaving the church, I administered the oil, which was rung. I felt that I had brought with me, which were thrown away by a priest, who in the oil to the forehead, and dyed off by a priest. I went home with a heavy heart, and often thought with a heavy heart, which I have heard told, and not like mine.

while not in a state of grace ! and now I had been led into all those sins in consequence of my marriage, which I never had acknowledged, as it would have cut me off from being admitted as a nun.

On the day when I went to the church to be confirmed with a number of others, I suffered extremely from the reproaches of my conscience. I believed, as I had been told, that a person who had been anointed with the holy oil of confirmation on the forehead, and dying in the state in which I was, would go down to hell, and, in the place where the oil had been rubbed, the names of my sins would blaze out of my forehead ; these would be a sign by which the devils would know me, and would torment me the worse for them. I was thinking of all this, while I was sitting in the pew, waiting to receive the oil. I felt however some consolation, when my sins came to my mind : which I derived from another doctrine of the church, viz., that a bishop could absolve me from all sins any minute before my death ; and I intended to confess them all before leaving the world. At length the moment for administering the " sacrament " arrived, and a bell was rung. Those who had come to be confirmed had brought tickets from their confessors, which were thrown into a hat, and carried around by a priest, who in turn handed each to a bishop, by which he learned our names and applied a little of the oil to the foreheads. This was immediately rubbed off by a priest with a bit of cloth quite roughly. I went home with some qualms of conscience, and often thought with dread of the following tale, which I have heard told, to illustrate the sinfulness of conduct like mine.

A priest was once travelling, when he was passing by a house, his horse fell on its knees, and would not rise. His rider dismounted and went in to learn the cause of so extraordinary an occurrence. He found there a woman near death, to whom a priest was trying to administer the sacrament, but without success; for every time she attempted to swallow it, it was thrown back out of her mouth into the chalice. He perceived it was owing to unconfessed sin, and took away the holy wafer from her; on which his horse rose from its knees, and he pursued his journey.

I also had been told, that we shall have as many devils biting us, if we go to hell, as we have unconfessed sins on our consciences.

I was required to devote myself for a year to the study of the prayers and practice the ceremonies necessary on the reception of a nun. This I found a very tedious duty; but as I was released from the daily labours usually demanded of novices, I felt little disposition to complain.

CHAPTER VI.

Taking the Veil—Interview afterwards with the Superior—Surprise and horror at the Disclosures—Resolution to submit.

I WAS introduced into the Superior's room on the evening preceding the day on which I was to take the veil, to have an interview with the bishop. The Superior was present, and the interview lasted half an hour. The bishop on this as on other occasions appeared to be habitually rough in his manner. His address was by no means prepossessing.

Before I took the veil, I was ornamented for the ceremony, and was clothed in a dress belonging to

the Convent, and placed near a number of taking the veil frequently in Mon regarded as a n been given in t nly a small au Being well p frequent rehear owing dress f le soon presen behind the altar nd asked him xpressed his c Superior, I thre according to my ave before done ent as if to kis appeared to p otion of her ha en kneeled befor rge round wafer s fore finger an This wafer I ha most veneration e presence of wh binding in the n After taking th artment behind ns, where there n's name engrav "S My companions

the Convent, which was used on such occasions; and placed near the altar in the chapel, in the view of a number of spectators, who had assembled. Taking the veil is an affair which occurs so frequently in Montreal, that it has long ceased to be regarded as a novelty; and, although notice had been given in the French parish church as usual, only a small audience assembled.

Being well prepared with a long training, and frequent rehearsals, I stood waiting in my large flowing dress for the appearance of the bishop. He soon presented himself, entering by a door behind the altar: I then threw myself at his feet, and asked him to confer upon me the veil. He expressed his consent; and then turning to the superior, I threw myself prostrate at her feet, according to my instructions, repeating what I have before done at rehearsals, and made a movement as if to kiss her feet. This she prevented, and appeared to prevent, catching me by a sudden motion of her hand, and granted my request. I then kneeled before the Holy Sacrament, that is a large round wafer held by the Bishop between his fore finger and thumb, and made my vows.

This wafer I had been taught to regard with the most veneration as the real body of Jesus Christ, the presence of which made the vows uttered before binding in the most solemn manner.

After taking the vows, I proceeded to a small apartment behind the altar, accompanied by four nuns, where there was a coffin prepared with my nun's name engraved upon it:

"SAINT EUSTACE."

My companions lifted it by four handles attached

to it, while I threw off my dress, and put on that of a nun of *Sœur Bourgeoise*; and then we all returned to the chapel. I proceeded first, and was followed by four nuns, the Bishop naming a number of worldly pleasures in rapid succession, in reply to which I as rapidly repeated, "*Je renounce, je renounce, je renounce.*"—I renounce, I renounce, I renounce.

The coffin was then placed in front of the altar and I advanced to place myself in it. This coffin was to be deposited, after the ceremony, in an out-house, to be preserved until my death, when it was to receive my corpse. There were reflections which I naturally made at that time, but I stepped in, extended myself, and lay still. A pillow had been placed at the head of the coffin, to support my head in a comfortable position. A thick black cloth was then spread over me, and the chanting of Latin hymns commenced. My thoughts were not the most pleasing during the time I lay in that situation. The pall, or *Drap Mortel*, as the cloth is called, had a strong smell of incense, which was always disagreeable to me, and then proved almost suffocating. I recollected the story of the novice, who, in taking the veil, lay down in her coffin like me, and was covered in the same manner, but on the removal of the covering was found dead.

When I was uncovered, I rose, stepped out of my coffin, and kneeled. Other ceremonies then followed, of no interest; after which the music commenced, and here the whole was finished. I then returned to the Superior's room, followed by the other nuns, who walked two by two, with their hands folded on their breasts, and their eyes cast down upon the floor. The nun who was to be my

companion in procession. all left me, with the Bishop.

The Superior the black veil the three oaths that some expressed some I was now to office, even to the imprisoned for I must be informed to obey the priests learnt, to my advantage in the practice of I expressed some sentiment excited in a of lightning; but I was fighting with me, I as a virtue accepted. The priests other men, being lived secluded, for our salvation. The our saviours, as we obtain pardon of was our solemn world to consecrate every species of sensible, nor mortal to be done by opposition; and when passing in the sight I had been to p

companion in future, then walked at the end of the procession. On reaching the Superior's door they all left me, and I entered alone, and found her with the Bishop and two Priests.

The Superior now informed me, that having taken the black veil, it only remained that I should swear the three oaths customary on becoming a nun: and that some explanation would be necessary from her. I was now to have access to every part of the edifice, even to the cellar, where two of the sisters were imprisoned for causes which she did not mention. I must be informed that one of my great duties was to obey the priests in all things; and this I soon learnt, to my astonishment and horror, was to live in the practice of criminal intercourse with them. I expressed some of the feelings which this announcement excited in me, which came upon me like a flash of lightning; but the only effect was to set her arguing with me, in favour of the crime, representing it as a virtue acceptable to God, and honourable to me. The priests, she said, were not situated like other men, being forbidden to marry; while they lived secluded, laborious, and self denying lives for our salvation. They might, indeed, be considered our saviours, as without their service we could not obtain pardon of sin, and must go to hell. Now it was our solemn duty, on withdrawing from the world to consecrate our lives to religion, to practice every species of self-denial. We could not be too humble, nor mortify our feelings too far; this was to be done by opposing them, and acting contrary to them; and what she proposed was, therefore, pleasing in the sight of God. I now felt how foolish I had been to place myself in their power.

From what she said, I could draw no other conclusions but that I was required to act like the most abandoned of beings, and that my future associates were habitually guilty of the most heinous and detestable crimes. When I repeated my expressions of surprise and horror, she told me that such feelings were very common at first, and that many other nuns had expressed themselves as I did, who had long since changed their minds. She even said, on her entrance into the nunnery, she had felt like me.

Doubts, she declared, were among our greatest enemies. They would lead us to question every point of duty, and induce us to waver at every step. They arose only from remaining imperfection, and were always evidences of sin. Our only way was to dismiss them immediately, repent and confess them. They were deadly sins, and would condemn us to hell, if we should die without confessing them. Priests, she insisted, could not sin. It was a thing impossible. Every thing that they did, and wished was right. She hoped I would see the reasonableness and duty of the oaths I was then to take, and be faithful to them.

She gave me other information, which excited feelings in me, scarcely less dreadful. Infants were sometimes born in the Convent, but they were always baptised, and immediately strangled! This secured their everlasting happiness; for the baptism purifies them from all sinfulness, and being sent out of the world before they had time to do anything wrong, they were at once admitted into heaven. How happy she exclaimed, are those who secure immortal happiness to such little beings!

Their little
bodies, if

Into wh
I been adm
appear from
women I h
venerable
the priests
whom, ind
profligate m
ed that they
and allowed
which they

After hav
number of th
part in the co
thing which
shame or co
themselves.
all this had a
whether I mi
if their reason
I had been
Catholics, and
unaccustomed
sation of Prot
the Bible as s
by precept an
thing said by
authority que
other standar
with the corr
at confessions
also. I had

Their little souls would thank those who kill their bodies, if they had it in their power.

Into what a place, and among what society, had I been admitted ! How different did a Convent now appear from what I supposed it to be ! The holy women I had always fancied the nuns to be, the venerable Lady Superior, what were they ? And the priests of the Seminary adjoining (some of whom, indeed, I had reason to think were base and profligate men,) what were they all ? I now learned that they were often admitted into the nunnery, and allowed to indulge in the greatest crimes, which they call virtues.

After having listened to the Superior alone, a number of the nuns were admitted, and took a free part in the conversation. They concurred in every thing which she told me, and repeated, without any shame or compunction, things which criminated themselves. I must acknowledge the truth, that all this had an effect upon my mind. I questioned whether I might not be in the wrong, and felt as if their reasoning might have some just foundation. I had been several years under the tuition of Catholics, and was ignorant of the Scriptures, and unaccustomed to the society, example, and conversation of Protestants ; had not heard any appeal to the Bible as authority, but had been taught, both by precept and example, to receive as truth everything said by the priests. I had not heard their authority questioned, nor any thing said of any other standard of faith. I had long been familiar with the corrupt and licentious expressions used at confessions, and believed that other women were also. I had no standard of duty to refer to, and

no judgment of my own which I knew how to use.

All around me insisted that my doubts proved only my own ignorance and sinfulness; that they knew by experience that they would soon give place to true knowledge, and an advance in religion; and I felt something like indecision.

Still there was so much that disgusted me in the debased characters around me, that I would most gladly have escaped from the nunnery, and never returned. But that was a thing not to be thought of. I was in their power, and this I deeply felt, while I thought that there was not one among the whole number of nuns to whom I could look for kindness. There was one, however, who began to speak to me in a tone that gained my confidence,—the nun whom I have mentioned as distinguished by her oddity, Jane Ray, who made us so much amusement when I was a novice. Although there was nothing in her face, form, or manners, to give me any pleasure, she addressed me with apparent friendliness; and while she seemed to concur with some things spoken by them, took an opportunity to whisper a few words in my ear, unheard by them, intimating that I had better comply with every thing the Superior desired, if I would save my life. I was somewhat alarmed before, but I now became much more so, and determined to make no further resistance. The Superior then made me repeat the three oaths; and, when I had sworn them, I was shown into the community-rooms, and remained some time with the nuns, who were released from their employments, and enjoyed a recreation day, on account of the admission of a new sister. My feelings during the remainder of the day I shall not

describe, but I
place at dinner.

At eleven o'clock
the nuns all took
the same order
ing, except the
stationed at the
for a moment,
other over the
with our heads
floor; an old nun
her hands as a
procession moving
repetition of litany
repeating all the
room, where were
on the right passage
and those on the left
in her place.
with a knife, for
and tied round
owner's name.
rest; and on the
new name written

There we stood
when the old nun
head of the table
ginning, "Benedictus
remember of what
usually had seen
the remains of
fricasee. One
ed to read that
a book put into

describe, but pass on to the ceremonies that took place at dinner.

At eleven o'clock the bell rang for dinner, and the nuns all took their places in a double row, in the same order as they left the chapel in the morning, except that my companion and myself were stationed at the head of the line. Standing thus for a moment, with our hands placed one on the other over the breast, and hidden in our large cuffs, with our heads bent forward, and eyes fixed on the floor; an old nun, who stood at the door, clapped her hands as a signal for us to proceed; and the procession moved on, while we all commenced the repetition of litanies. We walked on in this order, repeating all the way until we reached the dining-room, where we were divided into two lines; those on the right passing down one side of the long table, and those on the left the other; and each stopped in her place. The plates were all arranged, each with a knife, fork, and spoon, rolled up in a napkin, and tied round with a linen band marked with the owner's name. My own were prepared like the rest; and on the band around them I found my new name written—"Saint Eustace."

There we stood till all had concluded the litany, when the old nun who had taken her place at the head of the table, said the prayer before meat, beginning, "Benedicite," and we sat down. I do not remember of what our dinner consisted, but we usually had soup, and some plain dish of meat; the remains of which were served up at supper as fricasee. One of the nuns, who had been appointed to read that day, rose, and began a lecture from a book put into her hands by the Superior, while

the rest of us ate in perfect silence. The nun who reads during dinner, stays afterwards to dine. As fast as we finished our meals, each rolled up her knife, fork, and spoon, in her napkin, and bound them together with the band, and sat with hands folded. The old nun then said a short prayer, arose, stepped a little aside, clapped her hands, and we marched towards the door, bowing as we passed before a little chapel, or glass box, containing a wax image of the infant Jesus.

Nothing important occurred till late in the afternoon, when, as I was sitting in the community-room, Father Dufresne called me out, saying, he wished to speak with me. I feared what was his intention; but I dared not disobey. In a private apartment, he treated me in a brutal manner; and, from two other priests, I afterwards received similar usage that evening. Father Dufresne afterwards appeared again; and I was compelled to remain in company with him until morning.

I am assured that the conduct of priests in our Convent had never been exposed, and it is not imagined by the people of the United States. This induces me to say what I do, notwithstanding the strong reasons I have to let it remain unknown. Still I cannot force myself to speak on such subjects except in the most brief manner.

CHAPTER VII.

Daily Ceremonies—Jane Ray among the Nuns.

On Thursday morning, the bell rang at half-past six to waken us. The old nun who was acting as night-watch immediately spoke aloud;

"Voici le
Lord cometh.

"Allons-y

We rose im

ping into the

soon as were

her opposite co

in a double ro

hands folded

the broad cuff

attered. When

ceeded to the co

in rows facing

rior was seated

"Au nom du P

Ainsi soit il."

and the Holy G

and kissed the

mees, we said a

le mon ame," (

Then the Lord

reeds, and five

en commandme

o the Virgin, in

word of. Nex

f Jesus, in La

peated several

prayer for the be

own, we commen

prison,) which la

This exercise v

were told in the

aved by the use

consists of severa

"Voici le Seigneur qui vient." (Behold the Lord cometh.) The nuns all responded :

"Allons-y devant lui." (Let us go and meet him.)

We rose immediately, and dressed quickly, stepping into the passage-way, at the foot of our bed, as soon as were ready, and taking place each beside her opposite companion. Thus we were drawn up in a double row the length of the room, with our hands folded across our breast, and concealed in the broad cuffs of our sleeves. Not a word was uttered. When the signal was given, we all proceeded to the community-room, and took our places in rows facing the entrance, near which the Superior was seated in a vergiere. We first repeated "Au nom du Pere, du Fils, et du Saint Esprit—Ainsi soit il." (In the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost,—Amen.) We then knelt and kissed the floor; then, still kneeling, on our knees, we said a long prayer "Divin Jesus, sauveur de mon ame," (Divine Jesus, Saviour of my soul.) Then the Lord's prayer, three Hail Marys, four creeds, and five confessions, (confesse a Dieu.) the ten commandments; the acts of faith, and a prayer to the Virgin, in Latin, which I never understood a word of. Next we said litanies of the Holy Name of Jesus, in Latin, which were afterwards to be repeated several times in the day. Then came the prayer for the beginning of the day; then bending down, we commenced the Orison Mental, (or Mental Orison,) which lasted about an hour and a half.

This exercise was considered very solemn. We were told in the nunnery that a certain saint was saved by the use of it, as she never omitted it. It consists of several parts: First, the Superior read

to us a chapter from a book, which occupied five minutes. Then profound silence prevailed for fifteen minutes, during which we were meditating upon it. Then she read another chapter of equal length on a different subject, and we meditated upon that another quarter of an hour; and after a third reading and meditation, we finished the exercise with a prayer of contrition, in which we asked forgiveness for the sins committed during the Orison. During this hour and a half I became very weary, having before been kneeling for some time, and having then to sit in another position more uncomfortable, with my feet under me, and my hands clasped, and my body bent humbly forward, with my head bowed down.

When the Orison was over, we all rose to the upright kneeling posture, and repeated several prayers, and the litanies of the providences, "providence de Dieu," &c, then followed a number of Latin prayers, which we repeated in the way to mass, for in the nunnery we had mass daily.

When mass was over, we proceeded in our usual order to breakfast, practising the same forms which I have described at dinner. Having made our meal in silence, we repeated the litanies of the "holy name of Jesus," as we proceeded to the community room; and such as had not finished them on their arrival, threw themselves upon their knees until they had gone through with them and then kissing the floor, rose again. At nine o'clock commenced the lecture which was read by a nun appointed to perform that duty that day: all the rest of us in the room being engaged in work.

The nuns were distributed in different com-

unity rooms, as listening to an o'clock, which continued on subjects permitted the old nuns, the groups. ing, and this c e recitation of hour.

At eleven o'clock went through the proceeded two by hands as the first stopped. The first font, touched forehead, and each in the name of the men, and then with the litanies. The door the community nuns marching against their plates the litany alone Benedicite," and lecture, during the rest have of us folded our hands. The prayer in French, table, let us pass bowed in passing which is a glass-case infant Jesus.

unity rooms, at different kinds of work, and each was listening to a lecture. This continued until ten o'clock, when the recreation-bell rang. We still continued our work, but the nuns conversed on subjects permitted by the rules, in the hearing of the old nuns, one of whom was seated in each of the groups. At half-past ten the silence bell rang, and this conversation instantly ceased, and the recitation of some Latin prayers continued half an hour.

At eleven o'clock the dinner-bell rang, and we went through the forms of the preceding day. We proceeded two by two. The old nun clapped her hands as the first couple reached the door, when we stopped. The first two dipped their fingers into the font, touched with the holy water the breast, forehead, and each side, thus forming a cross, said in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, Amen, and then walked to the dining-room repeating the litanies. The rest did the same. On reaching the door the couples divided, and the two rows of nuns marching up, stopped, and faced the table against their plates. There we repeated the close of the litany aloud. The old nun pronounced "Benedicte," and we sat down. One of us read a lecture, during the whole meal: she stays to eat while the rest have retired. When we had dined, each of us folded up her napkin, and again folded her hands. The old nun then repeated a short prayer in French, and stepping from the head of the table, let us pass out as we came in. Each of us bowed in passing the little chapel near the door, which is a glass-case, containing a waxen figure of the infant Jesus. When we reached the communi-

ty-room we took our places in rows, and knelt upon the floor, while a nun read aloud. "Doleur de notre Sainte Marie," (the sorrows of our holy Mary.) At the end of each verse we responded "Ave Maria." We then repeated the litany of the providences and the "Benissante."

Then we kissed the floor, and, rising, took our work, to converse on permitted subjects—called *creation*—till one o'clock. We then repeated *anies*, one at a time in succession, still sewing, till an hour.

At two o'clock commenced the afternoon lecture which lasted till near three. At that hour one of the nuns stood up in the middle of the room, and asked each of us a question out of the catechism, and such as did not answer correctly had to kneel until that exercise was concluded, upon as many dry peas as there were verses in the chapter out of which they were questioned. I have sometimes knelt on peas until I suffered great inconvenience and pain. It soon makes one feel as if needles were running through the skin. At four o'clock recreation commenced, when we were allowed to speak to each other while at work. At half-past four we began to repeat prayers in Latin, while the superior worked till five o'clock, when we repeated the "prayer for the examination of conscience," the "prayer after confession," the prayer before sacrament, and the "prayer after sacrament." At dark, we laid our work aside, and went over the same prayer which we had repeated in the morning except the orison mental: instead of that long exercise, we examined our consciences, to determine whether we had performed the resolution we had made in

orning, and saying, "or expressing," or expressing, and an "acte de contrition." When the prayer was over, I had been disobedient, and had been imposed upon to supper, and the ceremonies were tedious. The lecture was read, and bowing to the superior, turning to the sisters, they were to repeat, (the Lord's Prayer, which comes down,) which comes down. Four Paters. Our Gloria patri. At half-past eight we closed, but closed in the corners. At half-past eight we read to us, in a low voice, upon duty, standing near the altar, and the holy water, crozier, and proceeded to the side of the altar, and had got into bed with,—
"Mon Dieu, je t'en prie."
"My God I give thee an old nun, and I winked it on our

orning, and such as had repeated an "acte de e," or expression of gratitude; such as had not, and an "acte de contrition."

When the prayers were concluded, any nun who had been disobedient in the day, knelt and asked pardon of the Superior and her companions "for the scandal she had caused them," and then requested a penance to perform. When all the penances had been imposed, we all proceeded to the eating-room to supper, repeating litanies on the way. The ceremonies were the same as at dinner, except that a lecture was read. We ate in silence, and went bowing to the chapelle, and repeating litanies. Returning to the community-room, we had more prayers to repeat, which are called *La couronne*, (crown,) which consists of the following parts:—
1st. Four Paters. 2nd. Four Ave Marias. 3rd. Our Gloria patris. 4th. Benissez Santeys. At the close we kissed the floor; then had recreation from half-past eight o'clock, conversing on permitted subjects, but closely watched, and not allowed to sit in the corners.

At half-past eight a bell was rung, and a chapter was read to us, in a book of meditations, to employ our minds upon during our waking hours at night. Standing near the door, we dipped our fingers in the holy water, crossed and blessed ourselves and proceeded to the sleeping room two by two. When we had got into bed, we repeated a prayer beginning with,—

"Mon Dieu, je vous donne mon cœur,"—

"My God I give you my heart;"

Then an old nun, bringing some holy water, sprinkled it on our beds to drive away the devil,

while we crossed ourselves with it again. At nine o'clock the bell rang, and all awake repeated a prayer, called the offrande; those who were asleep were considered as excused.

After my admission among the nuns, I had more opportunity to observe the conduct of mad Jane Ray. She behaved quite differently from the rest, and with a degree of levity irreconcilable with the rules. She was a large woman, with nothing beautiful or attractive in her face, form, or manners, careless in her dress, and of a restless disposition, which prevented her from applying herself to anything for any length of time, and kept her roving about, and always talking to somebody or other. She was dressed in the plain garments of the nuns, bound by the same vows, and accustomed to the same life, resembling them in nothing else, and frequently interrupting all their employments. She was apparently always studying, or pursuing some odd fancy; now rising from sewing to walk up and down, or straying in another apartment looking about, addressing some of us, passing out again, or saying something to make us laugh. But what showed she was no novelty, was the little attention paid to her, and the levity with which she was treated by the whole nuns; even the Superior every day passed over irregularities which she would have punished with penances, in any other. I soon perceived that she betrayed two distinct traits of character; a kind disposition towards such as she chose to prefer, and a pleasure in teasing those she disliked, or such as had offended her.

description of Apa
1st Floor—2nd
Management with
Criminality of Co

I WILL now g
on of the inter
cept the few ap
may be inaccura
ents and passag
merous and va
edit for truth a
ndence between
ey are. And th
se an any by w
ents, were it po
rior. It is well
e bishop and pr
urse that I cann
scribe, if I ha
ests who read
mselves the tru
urse, deny it to
mselves to dest
der the followin
y possibly throw
ow the entran
mselves, of its t
y be thought de
necessity be in t
e is a kind of ev
y unquestionable
never it shall be
f the interior of

CHAPTER VIII.

description of Apartments in the Black Nunnery, in order:
1st Floor—2nd Floor—Garret—The Founder—Superior's
Management with the Friends of Novices—Religious Lies—
Criminality of Concealing Sins at Confession.

I WILL now give from memory a general description of the interior of the Convent of Black Nuns, except the few apartments which I never saw. I may be inaccurate in some things, as the apartments and passages of that spacious building are numerous and various ; but I am willing to risk my credit for truth and sincerity on the general correspondence between my description and things as they are. And this would, perhaps, be as good a way as any by which to test the truth of my statements, were it possible to obtain access to the interior. It is well known, that none but veiled nuns, the bishop and priests, are ever admitted ; and, of course that I cannot have seen what I profess to describe, if I have not been a black nun. The persons who read this book will acknowledge to themselves the truth of my description ; but will, of course, deny it to the world, and probably exert themselves to destroy my credit. I offer to every reader the following description, knowing that time may possibly throw open those secret recesses, and show the entrance of those who can satisfy themselves, of its truth. Some of my declarations may be thought deficient in evidence, which must necessarily be in the present state of things. But there is a kind of evidence on which I rely, as I see it unquestionable and satisfactory it must prove, whenever it shall be obtained.

of the interior of the Black Nunnery, whenever

it shall be examined, is materially different from the following description, then I shall claim no confidence of my readers. If it resemble it, they will, I presume, place confidence in some of those declarations, on which I may never be corroborated by true and living witnesses.

I am sensible that great changes may be made in the furniture of apartments; that new walls may be constructed, or old ones removed; and I have been informed, that masons have been employed in the Nunnery since I left it. I well know, that entire changes cannot be made, and that enough must remain to substantiate my description, whatever the truth shall be known.

The First Story.

Beginning at the extremity of the western wing of the Convent, towards Notre Dame street, on the first story, there is—

1. The Nuns' private chapel, adjoining which is a passage to a small projection of the building extending from the upper story to the ground, with small windows. Into the passage we were required to bring wood from the yard, and pile it for use.

2. A large community-room, with plain benches fixed against the wall to sit, and lower ones in front to place our feet upon. There is a fountain in the passage near the chimney at the further end, for washing the hands and face, with a green curtain sliding on a rod before it. This passage leads to the old nuns' sleeping-room on the right, and the Superior's sleeping-room beyond it, as well as to a stair-case which conducts to the nuns' sleeping-room

above. At the
ing into—

3. The d
community-ro
ing, and a col
and an image

This apartmen
we are suppose
to a pantry, an
next apartment

4. A large c
ing, and a stair-

5. A commu
nuns and novice
a small room,

the examination
while a novice h
where nuns an
reflect on their c
the sacrament, o
the rules. T

ough to contain
6. Next, bey
r Sundays. A
a gate in the w

7. Adjoining
the cross street, w
the side oppos
ture, and that v

8. From this
a wax-room, as
intended for s
pray, or meditat
om projects from

above. At the end of the passage is a door opening into—

3. The dining-room; this is larger than the community-room, and has three long tables for eating, and a collection of little pictures, a crucifix, and an image of the infant Saviour in a glass case. This apartment has four doors, by the first of which we are supposed to have entered, while one opens to a pantry, and the third and fourth to the two next apartments.

4. A large community-room, with tables for sewing, and a stair-case on the opposite left-hand corner.

5. A community-room, for prayer used by both nuns and novices. In the farther right-hand corner is a small room, partitioned off, called the room for the examination of conscience, which I had visited while a novice by permission of the Superior, and where nuns and novices occasionally resorted to reflect on their character, usually in preparation for the sacrament, or when they had transgressed some of the rules. This little room was hardly large enough to contain half a dozen persons at a time.

6. Next, beyond, is a large community-room for Sundays. A door leads to the yard, and thence to a gate in the wall on the cross street.

7. Adjoining this is a sitting room, fronting on the cross street, with two windows, and a store room on the side opposite them. There is but little furniture, and that very plain.

8. From this room a door leads into what I call the wax-room, as it contains many figures in wax, not intended for sale. There we sometimes used to pray, or meditate on the Saviour's passion. This room projects from the main building; leaving it,

you enter a long passage, with cupboards on the right, in which are stored crockery-ware, knives and forks, and other articles of table furniture, to replace those worn out or broken—all of the plainest description; also, shovels, tongs, &c. This passage leads to—

9. A corner room, with a few benches, &c., and a door leading to a gate in the street. Here some of the medicines were kept, and persons were often admitted on business, or to obtain medicines with tickets from the priests; and waited till the Superior or an old nun could be sent for. Beyond this room we never were allowed to go; and I cannot speak from personal knowledge of what came next.

The Second Story.

Beginning, as before, at the western extremity of the north wing, but on the second story, the farthest apartment in that direction which I ever entered was,—

1. The nuns' sleeping-room, which I have described. Here is an access to the projection mentioned in speaking of the first story. The stairs by which we came up to bed are at the farther end of the room; and near them a crucifix and font of holy water. A door at the end of the rooms opens into a passage, with two small rooms, and closets between them, containing bed-clothes. Next you enter,—

2. A small community-room, beyond which is a passage with a narrow staircase, seldom used, which leads into the fourth community-room, in the fourth story. Following the passage just mentioned, you enter by a door,—

3. A little
ing manner:—
covered with
ble in the mi
books, an ink
little projectio
case leading fr
any communic
room has a doo
to the yard, on
into the cross
is admitted, e
usual. When
until a nun go
room, to see if
him. After pre
no further, but
these are the on
4. The nuns'
room on the east
the north, with
o end, and a few
posite extremity
wings to the left
glass case con
aviour, with sever
corner are two d
narrow passage,
aircase that con
assage the physio
e sick room, wh
all at the gate, w
ill, known only
stairs and thro

3. A little sitting-room furnished in the following manner:—with chairs, a sofa on the north side covered with a red-figured cover and fringe; a table in the middle, commonly bearing one or two books, an inkstand, pen, &c. At one corner is a little projection into the room, caused by a staircase leading from above to the floor below, without any communication with the second story. This room has a door opening upon a staircase leading to the yard, on the opposite side is a gate opening into the cross street. By this way the physician is admitted, except when he comes later than usual. When he comes in, he sits a little while, until a nun goes into the adjoining nuns' sick-room, to see if all is ready, and returns to admit him. After prescribing for the patients, he goes no further, but returns by the way he enters; and these are the only rooms into which he is admitted.

4. The nuns' sick-room adjoins the little sitting-room on the east, and has four windows towards the north, with beds ranged in two rows from end to end, and a few more between them, near the opposite extremity. The door to the sitting-room swings to the left, and behind it is a table, while a glass case contains a wax figure of the infant's behaviour, with several sheep. Near the north-eastern corner are two doors, one of which opens into a narrow passage, leading to the head of the great staircase that conducts to the cross street. By this passage the physician sometimes finds his way to the sick room, when he comes late. He rings the bell at the gate, which I was told had a concealed bell, known only to him and the priests, proceeds the stairs and through the passage, rapping three

times at the door of the sick-room, which is opened by a nun in attendance, after she has given one rap in reply. He returns by the same way.

5. Next beyond the sick-room, is a large unoccupied apartment, half divided by two partitions, which leave an open space in the middle. Here some of the old nuns meet in the day time.

6. A door from this apartment opens into another, not appropriated to any particular use, but containing a table, where medicines are sometimes prepared by an old nun. Passing through this room, you enter a passage, with doors on its four sides; that on the left, which is kept fastened on the inside, leads to the staircase and gate; and that in front to private sick-rooms.

7. That on the right leads to another, appropriated to nuns suffering with the most loathsome disease. There were usually a number of straw mattresses in that room, as I well know, having helped to carry them in, after the yard-man had filled them. A door beyond enters into a store-room, which extends also beyond this apartment. On the right, another door opens into another passage, crossing which, you enter by a door,

8. A room with a bed and screen in one corner, on which nuns were laid to be examined, before their introduction into the sick-room last mentioned. Another door, opposite opens into a passage, in which is a staircase leading down.

9. Beyond this is a spare room, sometimes used to store apples, boxes of different things, &c.

10. Returning now to the passage which opens on one side upon the stairs to the gate, we enter the only remaining door, which leads into an apartment

usually occu-
quently by

11. and
rooms, in or
waiting their
who have pa

13. The
priest waits t
murder. A
left, by the
neither of wh

14. The f
room occupied
penalty of the

15. The o
have access.

two rooms, co
various articles
received who c

The public h
siderable distan
By a public ent
into the Nunne
them thereabou
Priests often ge
exposing thems
the Convent, an
by the yard-nun
their clothes.

The congrega
nun, called Siste
in Montreal, and
Convent. He
kept under the N

usually occupied by some of the old nuns, and frequently by the Superior.

11. and 12. Beyond this are two more sick-rooms, in one of which those nuns stay who are waiting their accouchment, and in the other those who have passed it.

13. The next is a small sitting-room, where a priest waits to baptize the infants previous to their murder. A passage leads from this room on the left, by the doors of two succeeding apartments neither of which have I ever entered.

14. The first of them is the "holy retreat," or room occupied by the priests, while suffering the penalty of their licentiousness.

15. The other is a sitting-room, to which they have access. Beyond these, the passage leads to two rooms, containing closets for the storage of various articles; and two others, where persons are received who come on business.

The public hospitals succeed, and extend a considerable distance to the extremity of the building. By a public entrance in that part, priests often come into the Nunnery; and I have often seen some of them thereabouts, who must have entered that way. Priests often get into the "holy retreat," without exposing themselves to the view of other parts of the Convent, and have been first known to be there, by the yard-nuns being sent to the Seminary for their clothes.

The congregational Nunnery was founded by a nun, called Sister Bourgeoise. She taught a school in Montreal, and left property for the foundation of a Convent. Her body is buried, and her heart is kept under the Nunnery in an iron chest, which has

been shown to me, with the assurance that it continues in perfect preservation, although she has been dead more than one hundred and fifty years. In the chapel is the following inscription: "Sœur Bourgeoise, Fondatrice du convent." (Sister Bourgeoise, Founder of the Convent.)

Nothing was more common than for the Superior to step hastily into our community-room, while numbers of us were assembled there, and hastily communicate her wishes in words like these:—

"Here are the parents of such a novice; come with me and bear me out in this story." She would then mention the outlines of a tissue of falsehoods she had just invented that we might be prepared to fabricate circumstances, and throw in whatever else might favour the deception. This was justified and highly commended, by what we were instructed.

It was a common remark at the initiation of a new nun into the Black nunnery to receive the black veil, that the introduction of another novice into the Convent as a veiled nun, always caused the introduction of a veiled nun into heaven as a saint, which was on account of the disappearance of some of the older nuns always at the entrance of new ones.

To witness the scenes which often occurred between us and strangers would have struck a person most powerfully, if he had known how truth was set at naught. The Superior, with a serious and dignified air, and a pleasant voice and aspect, would commence a recital of things most favourable to the character of the absent novice, representing her equally fond of her situation, and beloved by the other inmates. The tale told by the Superior

however unh
her statemen
every way we
ations beyond
Sometimes

agement of su
us to the prac
complished, o
been a serious
to ascertain v
Often have I s
in a hurried ma

One point, o
instructions wa
heard many a s
was led to belie
one in which i
to act.

day—"what, a
difference betwe
He then went o
my hearing, to
between the two d
old merely for
interest alone, o
a sin worthy of
good of the chu
and the telling o
ies there are m
doctrines had bee
companions, more ti
often saw the p
made to take par
the Superior tho

however unheard before might have been any of her statements, was then attested by us, who in every way we could think of, confirmed her declarations beyond the reach of doubt.

Sometimes the Superior would intrust the management of such a case to the nuns, to habituate us to the practice in which she was so highly accomplished, or to relieve herself of what would have been a serious burden to most other persons, and to ascertain whether she could depend upon us. Often have I seen her throw open a door, and say, in a hurried manner, "Who can tell the best story?"

One point, on which we had received particular instructions was, the nature of falsehoods. I have heard many a speech, and many a sermon; and I was led to believe that it was of great importance, in which it was a duty to be well informed, as we were to act. "What!" exclaimed a priest one day—"what, a nun of your age, and not know the difference between a wicked and a religious lie?" He then went on, as had been done many times in my hearing, to show the essential difference between the two different kinds of falsehoods. A lie told merely for the injury of another, for our own interest alone, or for no object at all, he painted as a sin worthy of penance.—But a lie told for the good of the church or convent, was meritorious, and the telling of it a duty. And of this class of lies there are many varieties and shades. This doctrine had been inculcated on me and my companions, more times than I can enumerate. We often saw the practice of it, and were frequently made to take part in it. Whenever anything which the Superior thought important, could be most con-

veniently accomplished by falsehood, she resorted to it without scruple.

There was a class of cases, in which she more frequently relied on deception than any other.

The friends of novices frequently applied at the Convent to see them, or to inquire after their welfare. It was common for them to be politely refused an interview, on some account or other, a mere pretext; and then the Superior sought to make as favourable an impression as possible on the visitors. Sometimes she would make up a story on the spot, and tell the strangers; requiring some of us to confirm it in the most convincing way. At other times she would make over to us the task of deceiving, and we were commended in proportion to our ingenuity and success.

Some nun usually showed her submission, by immediately stepping forward. She would then add, that the parents of such a novice, whom she named, were in waiting, and it was necessary that they should be told such and such things. To perform so difficult a task well, was considered a difficult duty, and it was one of the most certain ways to gain the favour of the Superior. Whoever volunteered to make a story on the spot, was sent immediately to tell it, and the other nuns present with her under strict injunctions to uphold her in every thing she might state. The Superior, on all such occasions, when she did not herself appear, hastened to the apartment adjoining, there to listen through the thin partition, to hear whether all performed their parts aright. It was not uncommon for her to go rather further, when she wanted to give such explanations as she could have desired.

She would tell a good story without a motive, without being curious, or "world" outside. One of the nuns would undertake the task and signify ready wink of one. "Well, go and the Superior would say: wear to it."

Always performed present appeared thing that was u. We were constantly never again but must remember recoverably devoted very particular readers to understand were placed, and that we had to submit to perform at work, pray that we were peaker, but every we were constantly sight. The parents of God, especially teach us our duties and us to heaven. allowed we c

She would then enter abruptly, ask, "Who can tell a good story this morning?" and hurry us off without a moments delay, to do our best at a venture, without waiting for instructions. It would be curious, could a stranger from the "wicked world" outside the Convent, witness such a scene. One of the nuns who felt in a favourable humour to undertake the proposed task, would step forward, and signify readiness in the usual way, by a knowing wink of one eye, and a slight toss of the head.

"Well, go and do the best you can," the Superior would say: "and all the rest of you mind and swear to it." The latter part of the order, was always performed; for in every case, all the nuns present appeared as unanimous witnesses of everything that was uttered by the spokeswoman.

We were constantly hearing it repeated, that we must never again look upon ourselves as our own; but must remember, that we were solemnly and irrecoverably devoted to God. I cannot speak to every particular with equal freedom: but I wish my readers to understand the condition in which we were placed, and the means used to reduce us to that we had to submit to. Not only were we required to perform the several tasks imposed upon us at work, prayers and penances, under the idea that we were performing solemn duties to our Maker, but everything else which was required of us, we were constantly told, was indispensable in his sight. The priests, we admitted, were the servants of God, especially appointed by his authority, to teach us our duty, to absolve us from sin, and lead us to heaven. Without their assistance, we could never enjoy the favour of

God; unless they administered the sacrament to us, we could not enjoy everlasting happiness. Having acknowledged all this, we had no objection to urge against admitting any other demand that might be made by them. If we thought an act ever so criminal, the Superior would tell us that the priests acted under the direct sanction of God, and *could not sin*. Of course, then, it could not be wrong to comply with any of their requests, because they could not demand any thing but what was right. On the contrary, to refuse to do any thing they asked would necessarily be sinful. Such doctrines admitted, and such practices performed, it will not seem wonderful that we often felt something of their preposterous character.

Sometimes we took pleasure in ridiculing some of the favourite themes of our teachers; and I recollect one subject particularly, that afforded us merriment. It may seem irreverent in me to give the account, but I do it to show how things of a solemn nature were sometimes treated by women bearing the title of saints. A Canadian novice, who spoke very broken English, one day remarked that she was performing some duty "for the God." This peculiar expression had something ridiculous to our ears: and it was soon repeated again and again, in application to various ceremonies which we had to perform. Mad Jane Ray seized upon it with avidity, and with her aid it soon took the place of a by-word in conversation, so that we were constantly reminding each other that we were doing this thing and that thing, "for the God." Nor did we stop here; when the Superior called upon us to bear witness to one of her religious lies, or to

fabricate the
nit; we were
the stranger's
he God," A
mentioned—ev
dition was spo
I have hardl
give him a ju
confession. It
ur attention w
directed to keep
ur thoughts; t
he rules of the
on, and tell al
ither to the Sup
us kept in a
roved very wea
xertion of our t
ce they inculca
Another tale r
requently told u
of unreserved co
A nun of our
om her confess
ne to confess he
or the peace of
id, that it woul
ome to her, as h
ctrine is, that
nconfessed sin,
d this is the rea
The authority
e enormity of e
so impressed up
"Father" told

abricate the most spurious one the time would admit; we were sure to be reminded, on our way to the stranger's room, that we were doing it "for the God." And so it was when other things were mentioned—every thing which belonged to our condition was spoken of in similar terms.

I have hardly detained the reader long enough to give him a just impression of the stress laid on confession. It is one of the great points to which our attention was constantly directed. We were directed to keep a strict and constant watch over our thoughts; to have continually before our minds, the rules of the Convent, to remember every devotion, and tell all, even the smallest, at confession, either to the Superior or to the priest. My mind was thus kept in a continual state of activity which proved very wearisome; and it required the constant exertion of our teachers, to keep us up to the practice they inculcated.

Another tale recurs to me, of those which were frequently told us, to make us feel the importance of unreserved confession.

A nun of our Convent, who had hidden some sin from her confessor, died suddenly, and without any time to confess her. Her sisters assembled to pray for the peace of her soul, when she appeared and said, that it would be of no use, but rather troublesome to her, as her pardon was impossible. The doctrine is, that prayers made for souls guilty of unconfessed sin, do but sink them deeper in hell; and this is the reason for not praying for Protestants.

The authority of the priest in every thing, and the enormity of every act which opposes it, were so impressed upon our minds, by our teachers.

"Father" told us the following story.

A man once died who had failed to pay some money which the priest had asked of him; he was condemned to be burnt in purgatory until he should pay it, but had permission to come back to this world, and take a human body to work in. He came again on earth, and hired himself to a rich man as a labourer. He worked all day, with the fire burning in him, unseen by other people; but while he was in bed that night a girl perceiving the smell of brimstone, looked through a crack in the wall, and saw him covered with flames. She informed his master, who questioned him the next morning and found that he was secretly suffering the pains of purgatory, for neglecting to pay a sum of money to the priest. He, therefore, furnished him with the amount due; it was paid, and the servant went immediately to heaven. The priest cannot forgive any debt due unto him, because it is the Lord's estate.

While at confession, I was urged to hide nothing from the priests, they said that they already knew what was in my heart, but would not tell, because it was necessary for me to confess it. I believed that the priests were acquainted with my thoughts; and often stood in awe of them. They often told me they had the power to strike me dead at any moment.

CHAPTER IX.

Nuns with similar Names—Squaw Nuns—First visit to the Cellar—Description of it—Shocking Discovery there—Superior's Instructions—Private Signal of the Priest—Books used in the Nunnery—Opinions expressed of the Bible—Specimens of what I know of the Scriptures.

I FOUND that I had several namesakes among the nuns, two others who had already borne away

name, Saint E...
er there were
lonros, beside
namesakes, I h...
most nuns; bei...
with me and oth...
them, nor les...
Several of my...
ad taken the v...
om the Indian...
ot distinguisha...
ter from other...
their appearan...
gaged in their...
with much kindr...
e old nuns; an...
em as contente...
ossible: and I s...
r this partiality...
t influence oth...
ey were, like o...
fluence. And...
nd why this di...
dians were rem...
iving every thin...
presented to be...
vantage to a fa...
come a nun, In...
ney for the ad...
vent. The fat...
d, paid to the S...
on her recepti...
nearly all his...
luntarily, becau...

ame, Saint Eustace. This was not a solitary case, for there were five Saint Marys, and three Saint Monros, besides two novices of that name. Of my namesakes, I have little to say, for they resembled most nuns; being so much cut off from intercourse with me and other sisters, that I never saw any thing of them, nor learnt any thing worth mentioning.

Several of my new companions were squaws, who had taken the veil at different times. They were from the Indian settlements in the country, but were not distinguishable by any striking habits of character from other nuns, and were not very different in their appearance when in their usual dress, and engaged in their occupations. They were treated with much kindness and lenity by the Superior and the old nuns; and this was done in order to render them as contented and happy in their situation as possible: and I should have attributed the motives for this partiality to their wishing, that they might not influence others to keep away, had I not known they were, like ourselves, unable to exert such an influence. And therefore I could not satisfy my mind why this difference was made. Many of the Indians were remarkably devoted to the priests, believing every thing they were taught; and as it is presented to be not only a high honour, but a real advantage to a family, to have one of its members become a nun, Indian parents pay large sums of money for the admission of their daughters into a convent. The father of one of the squaws, I was told, paid to the Superior nearly her weight in silver on her reception, although he was obliged to sell nearly all his property to do it. This he did voluntarily, because he thought himself overpaid by

having the advantage of her prayers, self-sacrifices, &c., for himself and family. The squaws sometimes served to amuse us; for when we were partially dispirited or gloomy, the Superior would send them to dress themselves in their Indian garments, which usually excited us to merriment.

Among the squaw nuns whom I remember, was one of the Sainte Hypolites, not the one who figured in a dreadful scene, described in another part of this narrative, but a woman of a more mild and humane character.

A few days after my reception, the Superior sent me into the cellar for coals; and after she had given me directions, I proceeded down a staircase with a lamp. I soon found myself on the bare earth, in a spacious place, so dark that I could not at once distinguish its form or size, but I observed that it had very solid stone walls, and was arched overhead, at no great elevation. Following my directions, I proceeded onwards from the foot of the stairs, where appeared to be one end of the cellar. After walking about fifteen paces, I passed three small doors on the right, fastened with large iron bolts on the outside, pushed into positions of stone work, each having a small opening above covered with a fine grating, secured by a small bolt. On my left were three similar doors, resembling these, and opposite them.

Beyond these, the space became broader; the doors evidently closed small compartments, projecting from the outer wall of the cellar. I soon stepped upon a wooden floor, on which were heaps of wool, coarse linen, and other articles, deposited there for occasional use. I crossed the floor, and found the bare earth again under my feet.

A little further
by a row
projecting on
rent doors fr
g, and no op
Just beyond,
se leading up
ing those first
ore, on the oth
ese, I found th
d here the ear
itish substanc
As I proceeded
til the surface
rved before me
at I could perce
ve it—it was ci
the middle of t
b, so that one
the dark.
The white subs
around it; an
es, that it seem
n thrown into t
white substanc
e where the i
dered, as the
w that lime is c
burying places;
at the spot in s
his was a shock
ly tell-how it a
d to expect dr
e which prevent
erly have done

A little further on, I found the cellar contracted in size by a row of closets, or smaller compartments, projecting on each side. These were closed by different doors from the first, having a simple fastening, and no opening through them.

Just beyond, on the left side, I passed a staircase leading up, and then three doors, much resembling those first described, standing opposite three more, on the other side of the cellar. Having passed these, I found the cellar again enlarged as before, and here the earth appeared as if mixed with some whitish substance, which attracted my attention.

As I proceeded, I found the whiteness increase, until the surface looked almost like snow, and I observed before me, a hole dug so deep into the earth that I could perceive no bottom. I stopped to observe it—it was circular, twelve or fifteen feet across, in the middle of the cellar, and unprotected by any wall, so that one might easily have walked into it in the dark.

The white substance was spread all over the surface around it; and lay in such quantities on all sides, that it seemed as if a great deal must have been thrown into the hole. It occurred to me that this white substance was lime, and that this was the place where the infants were buried, after being ordered, as the Superior had informed me. I knew that lime is often used by Roman Catholics in burying places; and this accounted for its being found at the spot in such quantities.

This was a shocking thought to me; but I can only tell how it affected me, as I had been prepared to expect dreadful things, and undergone trials which prevented me from feeling as I should have done in similar circumstances.

I passed the spot, therefore, with dreadful thoughts about the little corpses which might be in that secret burying place, but with recollections also of the declarations about the favour done their souls in sending them direct to heaven, and the necessary virtue accompanying all the actions of the priests.

There is a window or two on each side nearly against the hole, in at which are sometimes thrown articles brought to them from without, for the use of the Convent. Through the window on my right, which opens into the yard, towards the cross street, lime is received from carts; I then saw a large heap of it near the place.

Passing the hole, I came to a spot where was another projection on each side, with three cells like those I first described. Beyond them, in another part of the cellar, were heaps of vegetables, and other things; and on the left, I found the charcoal I was in search of. This was placed in a heap against the wall, near a small high window, like the rest, at which it is thrown in. Beyond this space at a short distance, the cellar terminated.

The top, quite to that point, is arched overhead, though at different heights, for the earth on the bottom is uneven, and in some places several feet higher than in others. Not liking to be alone in so spacious and gloomy a part of the Convent, especially after the discovery I had made, I hastened to fill my basket and to return.

Here then I was in a place which I had considered as the nearest imitation of heaven to be found on earth, amongst a society where deeds were perpetrated, which I had believed to be criminal, and had now found the place, in which harm

Infants were being murdered, and destruction and many around righteous and believe it, for the first instruction was to admit the street, at irregular intervals, priests enter and are watched by any long, no irregular might be supposed performance of religious duty. But if a person might, he might stray priest is the need of some admitted into the priest can ring the bell can any but a bell is entered the gate. He makes himself heard, made by the they are kept close within, who delay who is there, immediately with two in the instead of yet The Superior considers it important, at every occasion to be called to the door,

infants were unfeelingly thrown out of sight, after being murdered. And yet, such is the power of instruction and example, although not satisfied, as many around me seemed to be, that this was all righteous and proper, I sometimes was inclined to believe it, for the priests could do no sin. Among the first instructions I received from the Superior, one was to admit priests into the nunnery, from the street, at irregular hours. It is no secret that priests enter and go out; but if they were to be watched by any person in St. Paul's street all day long, no irregularity might be suspected; and they might be supposed to visit the Convent for the performance of religious ceremonies merely.

But if a person were near the gate about midnight, he might form a different opinion; for when a stray priest is shut out of the Seminary, or is out in the need of seeking a lodging, he is sure of being admitted into the Black Nunnery. Nobody but the priest can ring the bell at the sick-room door; much less can any but a priest gain admittance. The pull of the bell is entirely concealed on the outside of the gate.

He makes himself known as a priest by a hissing sound, made by the tongue against the teeth while they are kept closed and the lips open. The nun within, who delays to open the door until informed who is there, immediately recognizes the signal, and replies with two inarticulate sounds, such as are often used instead of yes, with the mouth closed.

The Superior considered this part of my instructions important, and taught me the signals. I had an occasion to use them; I have been repeatedly called to the door, in the night, while watching in

the sick-room; and on reaching it, heard the hissing sound, then according to my orders, unfastened the door, admitted a priest, who was at liberty to go where he pleased. I will name M. Bierze, from St. Denis.

The books used in the nunnery, such as I recollect of them, were the following. Most of these are lecture books, such as are used by the daily readers, while we were at work and meals. These were all furnished by the Superior, out of her library, to which we never had access. When we had done with the book, it was exchanged for another, as she pleased to select. *La Miroir de Chrétien* (Christian Mirror,) *History of Rome*, *History of the Church*, *Life of Sœur Bourgeoise*, (the founder of the Convent,) in two volumes, *L'Ange Conducteur* (the Guardian Angel,) *L'Ange Chrétien* (the Christian Angel,) *Les Vies des Saints* (Lives of the Saints,) in several volumes, *Dialogues*, a volume consisting of conversations between a Protestant Doctor, called Dr. D. and a Catholic gentleman, on the articles of faith, in which, after much ingenious reasoning, the former was confuted; one large book, the name I have forgotten, occupied us nine or ten months of our lectures, night and morning, *L'Instruction de la Jeunesse* (the Instruction of Youth,) containing much about Convents, and the education of persons in the world, with a great deal on confessions, &c. *Examen de la Conscience* (Examination of Conscience,) is a book frequently used.

I never saw a Bible in the Convent from the day I entered as a novice, until that on which I effected my escape. The Catholic New Testament, commonly called the *Evangile*, was read to us three

four times a
er what pass
our hands to
the Protestan
most danger
in the hands

Manufacture of
Convent—Sup
cushion—Her
Instructions to

Large quant
Nunnery every
necessary to feed
died. When a
to a poor person
resented at the
the most laborio
The manufact
ortant branch o
carried on in a s
the ciergerie, or
ord for wax. I
aily lecture and
pleasant task, a
wax gave me a
employment was
re assigned to
ns. The nuns
oyed in that room
me, Saint Charle
the, Saint Hy
as, as with other

four times a year. The Superior directed the reader what passages to select; but we never had it in our hands to read when we pleased. I often heard the Protestant Bible spoken of, in bitter terms, as a most dangerous book, and which never ought to be in the hands of common people.

CHAPTER X.

Manufacture of Bread and Wax candles, carried on in the Convent—Superstitions—Scapularies—Virgin Mary's Pin-cushion—Her House—The Bishop's Power over fire—My Instructions to Novices—Jane Ray—Vacillation of Feelings.

Large quantities of bread are made in the Black Nunnery every week; for besides what is necessary to feed the nuns, many of the poor are supplied. When a priest wishes to give a loaf of bread to a poor person, he gives him an order, which is presented at the Convent. The making of bread is the most laborious employment in the institution.

The manufacture of wax candles was another important branch of business in the nunnery. It was carried on in a small room, on the first floor, called the *ciergerie*, or wax room, *cierge* being the French word for wax. I was sometimes sent to read the daily lecture and catechism, but found it a very unpleasant task, as the smell rising from the melting wax gave me a sickness at the stomach. The employment was considered unhealthy, and those were assigned to it who had the strongest constitutions. The nuns who were more commonly employed in that room, were Saint Maria, Saint Catherine, Saint Charlotte, Saint Frances, Saint Hyacinthe, Saint Hypolite, and others. But with these, as with others in the Convent, I was never

allowed to speak, except under circumstances before mentioned. I was sent to read and was not allowed to answer the most trivial question, if one were asked. Should a nun say, "What o'clock is it?" I never dared to reply, but was required to report her to the Superior.

Much stress was laid on the *sainte scapulaire*, or holy scapulary. This is a small band of cloth or silk, formed in a particular manner, to be tied around the neck, by two strings, fastened to the ends. I have made many of them; having been set to make them in the Convent. On one side is worked a double cross (thus, + +) and on the other I. H. S. Such a band is called a scapulary, and many miracles are attributed to its power. Children on first receiving the communion are often presented with scapularies, which they are taught to regard with great reverence. We were told of the wonders effected by their means, in the addresses made to us, by priests, at catechism or lectures. I will repeat one or two of the stories.

A Roman Catholic servant woman, who had concealed some of her sins at confession, acted so hypocritical a part as to make her mistress believe her a devotee, or strict observer of her duty. She even imposed upon her confessor so that he gave her a scapulary. After he had given it, however, one of the saints in heaven informed him in a vision, that the holy scapulary must not remain on the neck of so great a sinner, and that it must be restored to the church. She lay down that night with the scapulary round her throat; but in the morning was found dead, with her head cut off, and the scapulary was discovered in the church. The belief was

that the d
thing on c
to get it o
it was tied
divine pow

Another
taken prison
scapulaire
the midst o
miracle, an
of heretics;
by seeing it

I had been
ous passage,
into the Con
had so often
One day, afte
months, I wa
with another
penances, we
priests, witho
mon way was
ance was imp
conjecture.
us at the sub
to recollect so
not because h
subject.

The nun wh
passing to the
showed me th
which was to
The reasons w
that it was ma

that the devil could not endure to have so holy a thing on one of his servants, and had pulled so hard to get it off, as to draw the silken thread with which it was tied, through her neck ; after which, by some divine power, it was restored to the church.

Another story. A poor Roman Catholic was once taken prisoner by the heretics. He had a *Saint scapulaire* on his neck, when God, seeing him in the midst of his foes, took it from the neck by a miracle, and held it up in the air above the throng of heretics ; one hundred of whom were converted, by seeing it thus supernaturally suspended.

I had been informed that there was a subterraneous passage, leading from the cellar of our Convent, into the Congregational Nunnery ; but, though I had so often visited the cellar, I had never seen it. One day, after I had been received three or four months, I was sent to walk through it on my knees with another nun, as a penance. This, and other penances, were sometimes put upon us by the priests, without any reason assigned. The common way was to tell us of the sin for which a penance was imposed, but we were left many times to conjecture. Now and then the priest would inform us at the subsequent confession, when he happened to recollect something about it, as I thought, and not because he reflected or cared much upon the subject.

The nun who was with me led through the cellar, passing to the right of the secret burial-place, and showed me the door of the subterraneous passage, which was towards the Congregational Nunnery. The reasons why I had not noticed it before, were, that it was made to shut close and even with the

wall ; and that part of the cellar was whitewashed. The door opens with a latch into a passage about four feet and a half high. We got upon our knees, commenced saying the prayers required, and began to move slowly along the dark and narrow passage. It may be fifty or sixty feet in length. When we reached the end, we opened the door, and found ourselves in the cellar of the Congregational Nunnery, at some distance from the outer wall. By the side of the door, was placed a list of names of the Black Nuns, with a slide that might be drawn over any of them. We covered our names in this manner, as evidence of having performed the duty assigned us ; and then returned downwards on our knees, by the way we had come. This penance I repeatedly performed afterwards ; and by this way, nuns from the Congregational Nunnery sometimes entered our Convent for worse purposes.

We were frequently assured that miracles are still performed ; and pains were taken to impress us deeply on this subject. The Superior often spoke to us of the Virgin Mary's pincushion, the remains of which are preserved in the Convent, though it has crumbled quite to dust. We regarded this relic with such veneration, that we were afraid even to look at it, and we often heard the following story related, when the subject was introduced.

A priest in Jerusalem had a vision, when he was informed that the house in which the Virgin had lived, should be removed from its foundations, and transported to a distance. He did not think the communication was from God, and disregarded it ; but the house was soon after missed, which convinced him that the vision was true, and he told where

the house mi
is preserved
There are al
and Jesus, as
were taught
chorus of wh

" Sai
Petit
Pour

(St. Joseph w
chips to make
about a family
priest, who we
two sons hono

I had heard

a great fire wh
in the Quebec
Bishop exting
a Catholic and
ject, and when
nery, I someti
the same story
tholic fire ? T

Among the t
ed the nuns in
us the story on
terfered and s
finding they w
tholic houses,
extinguished it
that he was abl

The holy wa
ted, was consid

the house might be found. A picture of the house is preserved in the Nunnery, and was shown us. There are also wax figures of Joseph sawing wood, and Jesus, as a child, picking up the chips. We were taught to sing a song relating to this, the chorus of which I remember :

“ Saint Joseph carpentier,
Petit Jesus ramassait les copeaux
Pour faire bouillir la marmite ! ”

(St. Joseph was a carpenter, little Jesus collected chips to make the pot boil !) I recollect a story about a family in Italy saved from shipwreck by a priest, who were in consequence converted, and had two sons honoured with the priest's office.

I had heard, before I entered the Convent, about a great fire which had destroyed a number of houses in the Quebec suburbs, and which some said the Bishop extinguished with holy water. I once heard a Catholic and a Protestant disputing on this subject, and when I went to the Congregational Nunnery, I sometimes heard the children, alluding to the same story, say at an alarm of fire, “ Is it a Catholic fire ? Then why does not the Bishop run ? ”

Among the topics on which the Bishop addressed the nuns in the Convent, this was one. He told us the story one day, that he could have sooner interfered and stopped the flames, but that at last, finding they were about to destroy too many Catholic houses, he threw holy water on the fire, and extinguished it. I believed this, and also thought that he was able to put out any fire.

The holy water which the Bishop has consecrated, was considered more efficacious than any bles-

sed by a priest: and this it was which was used in the Convent in sprinkling our beds. It has virtue in it, to keep off any evil spirit.

Now that I was a nun, I was sent to read lectures to the novices, as other nuns had been while I was a novice. There were but few of us who were thought capable of reading English well enough, and, therefore, I was more frequently sent than I might otherwise have been. The Superior often said to me, as I was going: "Try to convert them—save their souls—you know you will have a higher place in heaven for every one you convert."

For whatever reason, Mad Jane Ray seemed to take great delight in crossing and provoking the Superior and old nuns: and often she would cause an interruption when it was most displeasing to them. The preservation of silence was insisted upon most rigidly, and penances of such a nature were imposed for breaking it, that it was a constant source of uneasiness with me, to know that I might infringe the rules in so many ways, and that inattention might at any moment subject me to them. During the periods of meditation, and those of lecture, work, and repose, I kept a strict guard upon myself, to escape penances, as well as to avoid sin: and the silence of the others convinced me that they were equally watchful from the same motives.

My feelings, however, varied at different times, and so did those of many of my companions, excepting the older ones, who took their turns in watching us. We sometimes felt disposed for gaiety, and threw of all idea that talking was sinful, even when required by the rules of the Convent. I even, when I felt that I might perhaps be doing

wrong, reflected soon wipe off t

But I soon found myself known to a person that it was bettered against the penance I imposed me to the demanded self-denial their pardon, but yet, &c., for, as and could not in conscience being confession to the sins to any one but others for the however, it appeared she knew her vice she exposed. Often while penances, at meditation except the voice of whose life or contemplation, James or question, and often in. Sometimes mark or inquiry tenency, and then could arrest the laugh. The Superior's contrivance, or perhaps Jane had ever calculated to

wrong, reflected that confession, and penance, would soon wipe off the guilt.

But I soon found out several things important to be known to a person living under such rules. First, that it was better to confess to a priest a sin committed against the rules, because he would not require the penance I most disliked, viz., those which exposed me to the observation of the nuns, or which demanded self-debasement before them, like begging their pardon, kissing the floor or the Superior's feet, &c., for, as a confessor he was bound to secrecy, and could not inform the Superior against me. My conscience being as effectually unburdened by my confession to the priest, I preferred not to tell my sins to any one else: and this course was preferred by others for the same good reasons. To Jane Ray, however, it appeared to be a matter of indifference who knew her violations of rule, and to what penance she exposed herself.

Often while perfect silence prevailed among the nuns, at meditation, or while nothing was heard except the voice of the reader for the day, no matter whose life or writings were presented for our contemplation, Jane would break forth with some remark or question, that would attract general attention, and often cause a long and total interruption. Sometimes she would make some harmless remark or inquiry aloud, as if through mere inadvertency, and then her loud and well known voice, would arrest the attention of us all, and incline us to laugh. The Superior usually uttered a hasty reprimand, or pronounce some penance upon her: but Jane had ever some apology ready, or some reply calculated to irritate more, or to prove that no

punishment would be effectual on her. Sometimes she appeared to be actuated by opposite feelings and motives; for though she delighted in drawing others into difficulty, and has thrown severe penances upon her favourites, on other occasions she was regardless of consequences herself, and preferred to take all the blame, to shield others. I have often known her to break silence in the community, as if she had no object beyond that of causing disturbance, or exciting a smile, and as soon as it was noticed, exclaim, "Say it's me, say it's me!" Sometimes she would expose herself to punishment in place of another who was guilty; and thus I found it difficult to understand her. In some cases she seemed out of her wits, as the Superior and priests commonly represented her; but generally I saw in her what prevented me from accounting her insane.

Once she gave me the name of the "Devout English Reader," because I was often appointed to read the lecture to the English girls; and sometimes, sitting near me, under pretence of deafness, would whisper it in my hearing, for she knew my want of self-command when excited to laughing. Thus she often exposed me to penances for a breach of decorum, and set me to biting my lips, to stop laughing outright in the midst of a solemn lecture. "Oh! you devout English reader!" she would say with something so ludicrous, that I had to exert myself to the utmost to avoid observation.

This came so often at one time, that I grew weary, and told her I must confess it, to unburden my conscience. Sometimes she would pass before us as we stood at dinner ready to sit down, and

stly moving
on the floor
er, she would
t, and beg he

arming Order from
Scene in an upper
My own distress

I must now con-
t, and which I
pain. In it
is not necessary
or any other
make allowance
e, the command
about five me-
ther was cool,
Superior sent for
ive her commands
e priests with her
of fierceness and
room for the English
St. Frances
l, with her tone
gloomy anticipa-
ge that St. Fran-
h the Superior
h we were often
ion, and to which
we felt the com-
ty, and the mil-
dust to seek relief

ftly moving back our chairs, leave us to fall down on the floor, and while we were laughing together, she would spring forward, kneel to the Superior, and beg her pardon and a penance.

CHAPTER XL.

Forming Order from the Superior—Proceed to execute it—Scene in an upper Room—Sentence of Death, and Murder—My own distress—Reports made to Friends of St. Frances.

I must now come to a deed in which I had some part, and which I look back upon with great horror and pain. In it I was not the principal sufferer. It was not necessary to attempt to excuse myself in any other case. Those who judge fairly, will make allowances for me, under the fear and awe, the command and examples, before me. It was about five months after I took the veil, the weather was cool, perhaps in October. One day, the Superior sent for me and several other nuns, to receive her commands. We found the Bishop and several priests with her; and speaking in an unusual tone of fierceness and authority, she said, "Go to the room for the Examination of Conscience, and examine St. Frances up stairs." A command so unusual, with her tone and manner, excited in me the gloomy anticipations. It did not strike me as strange that St. Frances should be in the room to which the Superior directed us; an apartment to which we were often said to prepare for the communion, and to which we voluntarily went, when we felt the compunctions which our ignorance and folly, and the misinstructions we received, induced us to seek relief from self-reproach. I had seen

her there a little before. What terrified me was first, the Superior's angry manner; second, the expression she used, a French term, whose meaning is rather softened when translated into *drag*; third, the place to which we were directed to take the interesting young nun, and the persons assembled there, as I supposed to condemn her. My fears were such, concerning the fate that awaited her, and my horror at the idea that she was in some way to be sacrificed, that I would have given any thing to be allowed to stay where I was. But I feared the effects of disobeying the Superior, and proceeded with the rest towards the room for the examination of conscience.

The room was in the second story, and the place of many a scene of a shameful nature. It is sufficient to say, that things had there occurred which made me regard the place with the greatest disgust. Saint Frances had appeared melancholy for some time. I knew that she had cause, for she had been repeatedly subject to trials which I need not mention—our common lot. When we reached her room, I entered the door, my companions standing behind me, as the place was so small as hardly to hold several persons at a time. The young nun was standing alone, near the middle of the room; she was probably about twenty, with light hair, blue eyes, and a very fair complexion. I spoke to her in a compassionate voice, but with such a decided manner, that she comprehended my full meaning. "Saint Frances, we are sent for you."

Several others spoke kindly to her, but two dressed her very harshly. The poor creature looked round with a look of meekness, and without expre-

g any unwillingness a word, resigned me into my hands. I considered her fate with the fear of death, and then almost dragged her on her—I too, more than some carrying her. I could not have survived her; it was a punishment were punishment could have compared to this. Saint Frances made the slightest room to which I drew me. The priests, viz.: Fathers, were assembled of importance. Father Richards, however, was calm, and I could not account of what he said to such a pitch, under a terrible feeling. I saw the cold-blooded sister; and then, rendered me a room, I saw the entrance, with myself by leaning against me falling

any unwillingness or fear, without even speaking a word, resigned herself to our hands. The tears came into my eyes. I had not a doubt that she considered her fate as sealed, and was already beyond the fear of death. She was conducted to the staircase, and then seized by her limbs and clothes, and almost dragged up stairs. I laid my own hands on her—I took hold of her, too, more gently indeed than some of the rest; yet I assisted them in carrying her. I could not avoid it. My refusal would not have saved her, nor prevented her being carried up; it would only have exposed me to some severe punishment, as some of my companions would have complained of me. All the way up the staircase, Saint Frances spoke not a word, nor made the slightest resistance. When we entered the room to which she was ordered, my heart sunk within me. The Bishop, the Lady Superior, and the priests, viz.: Bonin, Richards, Savage, and two others, were assembled for trial, on some charge of great importance.

Father Richards questioned her, and she made ready, but calm replies. I cannot give a connected account of what ensued: my feelings were wrought to such a pitch, that I knew not what I did. I was under a terrible apprehension that, if I betrayed my feelings I should fall under the displeasure of the cold-blooded persecutors of my poor innocent sister; and this fear and the distress I felt for her, rendered me almost frantic. As soon as I entered the room, I stepped into a corner, on the left of the entrance, where I might partially support myself by leaning against the wall. This support prevented me falling to the floor; for the confusion of

my thoughts was so great, that only a few of the words I heard made any lasting impression upon me. I felt as if death would not have been more frightful to me. I am inclined to think that Father Richards wished to shield the poor prisoner from the severity of her fate, by drawing from her expressions that might bear a favourable construction. He asked her, among other things, if she was now sorry for what she had been overheard to say, (she had been betrayed in by a nun,) and if she would not prefer confinement in the cells to the punishment threatened. But the Bishop soon interrupted him, and it was easy to perceive, that he was determined she should not escape. In reply to some of the questions she was silent; to others I heard her reply that she did not repent of words she had uttered, though they had been reported by some of the nuns who had heard them; that she had firmly resolved to resist every attempt to compel her to the commission of crimes which she detested. She added that she would rather die than cause the murder of harmless babes. "That is enough, finish her!" said the Bishop.

Two nuns instantly fell upon her, and in obedience to directions, given by the Superior, prepared to execute her sentence. She still maintained all the calmness and submission of a lamb. Some of those who took part in this transaction, I believe, were as unwilling as myself; but others delighted in it. Their conduct exhibited a most bloody thirsty spirit. But above all human fiends I ever saw, Saint Hypolite was the most diabolical; she engaged in the horrid task with all alacrity, and selected from choice the most revolting parts to be performed. She seized a gag, forced it into the mouth

the poor nun
stended jaws.
reatest possibl
stened at each
and the helples
ght through th
The bed which
room, still re
reen, which ha
evice through
t, had been fol
a W., and plac
soner was laid
and with cords
instant, anothe
the priests, nam
n it, with all h
ed by the nuns
bed as could fi
ld, not only to s
ed up and jump
some with the
seemed to se
th out of her bo
in direct contac
their violence.
almost too stro
d, and scarcely
fear for myself
I attempted to
y that I might b
the dreadful so
ter the lapse of
it was presume

the poor nun, and when it was fixed between her extended jaws, so as to keep them open at their greatest possible distance, took hold of the straps fastened at each end of the stick, crossed them behind the helpless head of the victim, and drew them tight through the loop prepared as a fastening.

The bed which had always stood in one part of the room, still remained there; though the muslin screen, which had been placed before it, with only a crevice through which a person behind might look, had been folded up on its hinges in the form of a W., and placed in a corner. On the bed the prisoner was laid with her face upward, and then bound with cords so that she could not move. In an instant, another bed was thrown upon her. One of the priests, named Bonin, sprung like a fury first upon it, with all his force. He was speedily followed by the nuns, until there were as many upon her as could find room, and all did what they could, not only to smother, but to bruise her. Some stood up and jumped upon the poor girl with their hands, some with their knees: and others, in different positions, seemed to seek how they might best beat the life out of her body, and mangle it, without coming in direct contact with it, or seeing the effects of their violence. During this time, my feelings were almost too strong to be endured. I felt stupid, and scarcely was conscious of what I did. My fear for myself induced me to some exertion; I attempted to talk to those who stood next, saying that I might have an excuse for turning away from the dreadful scene.

After the lapse of fifteen or twenty minutes, and when it was presumed that the sufferer had been

smothered and crushed to death, Father Bonin and the nuns ceased to trample upon her, and stepped from the bed. All was motionless and silent beneath it. They then began to laugh at such inhuman thoughts as occurred to some of them, rallying each other in the most unfeeling manner, and ridiculing me for feelings which I in vain endeavoured to conceal. They alluded to the resignation of our murdered companion; and one of them tauntingly said, "She would have made a good Catholic martyr." Then one of them asked if the corpse should be removed. The Superior said it had better remain a little while. After waiting a short time, the feather-bed was taken off, the cords unloosed, and the body taken by the nuns and dragged down stairs into the cellar, and thrown into the hole which I have already described, covered with a great quantity of lime; and afterwards sprinkled with a liquid, of the properties and name of which I am ignorant. This liquid I have seen poured into the hole from large bottles, after the necks were broken off; and have heard that it is used in France to prevent the effluvia rising from cemeteries.

I did not soon recover from the shock caused by this scene; it still recurs to me, with most gloomy impressions. The next day, there was a melancholy aspect over every thing, and recreation time passed in the dullest manner; scarcely any thing was said above a whisper. I never heard much said afterwards about Saint Frances.

I spoke with one of the nuns a few words, once, but we were all cautioned not to expose ourselves very far, and could not place much reliance in each other. The murdered nun had been brought to

shocking end
number in
certainty wh
superior, but s
could regard
inclined to bl
the execution
nity for the be

I was often
was said by no
honor her: she
speaking Engl
never informed
clear my consc
confess, knowin
what I said to a
choose as heavy
We were allowe
we had any sin to
to tell one to who
not long after th
the nunnery, and
Frances. It was
had been an assist
net, of St. Dem
murdered nun mig
vicinity. The
is dead. Afterw
called to inquire at
he died a glorio
evenly expressio
satisfy her friend

shocking end through the treachery of one of our number in whom she confided. I never knew with certainty who had reported her remarks to the Superior, but suspicion fastened on one, and I never could regard her but with detestation. I was more inclined to blame her than some of those employed in the execution; for there could have been no necessity for the betrayal of her feelings.

I was often sent by the Superior to overhear what was said by novices and nuns, when they seemed to shun her: she would say, "Go and listen, they are speaking English;" and though I obeyed her, I never informed her against them. If I wished to clear my conscience, I would go to a priest and confess, knowing that he dared not communicate what I said to any person, and that he would not choose as heavy penances as the Superior.

We were allowed to choose another confessor when we had any sin to confess, which we were unwilling to tell one to whom we should otherwise have done. Not long after this murder a young woman came to the nunnery, and asked for permission to see St. Frances. It was my former friend, with whom I had been an assistant teacher, Miss Louisa Bousquet, of St. Denis. From this, I supposed the murdered nun might have come from that town, or its vicinity. The only answer was, that St. Frances was dead. Afterwards some of St. Frances' friends called to inquire after her, and they were told that she died a glorious death; and had made some heavenly expressions, which were repeated in order to satisfy her friends.

CHAPTER XII.

Description of the Room of the three States, and the Pictures in it—Jane Ray—ridiculing Priests—their criminal Treatment of us at Confession—Jane Ray's tricks with the Nuns' Aprons, Handkerchiefs, and Night Gowns—Apples.

The pictures in the room of the three States were large, and painted by an artist who knew how to make horrible ones. They appeared to be stuck to the walls. The light is admitted from small high windows, curtained, so as to make every thing look gloomy. They told us that they were painted by an artist, to whom God had given power to represent things exactly as they are in heaven, hell, and purgatory.

In heaven, the picture of which hangs on one side of the apartment, multitudes of nuns and priests are put in the highest places, with the Virgin Mary at their head, St. Peter and other saints, far above the great numbers of good Catholics of other classes who are crowded in below.

In purgatory are multitudes of people; and in one part, called "*The place of lambs*," are infants who died unbaptized. "*The place of darkness*" is the part of purgatory in which adults are collected; there they are surrounded by flames, waiting to be delivered by the prayers of the living.

In the picture of hell the faces were the most horrible that can be imagined. Persons of different descriptions were represented, with the most distorted features, ghastly complexions, and every variety of dreadful expression: some with wild beasts gnawing at their heads, others furiously biting the iron bars which kept them in, with lions which could not fail to make a spectator shudder.

I could have sworn I were not living. I felt my feelings in a place where I was warned. It was more than that to see cause they are were assured, which they are that room, as les âmes des faithful ones who have no relations feelings were of was alone with Jane Ray was dreadful shrieks. The Superior told, "go and look more than all the place; and she gave figures in the picture. I took a seat behind the priest could not see. I would make a relative to your lesson, while we tried. Jane would then the priest's name who one of the faces in the picture. I could hardly preserve named the wretched hell, with a scene and padlock.

I could hardly persuade myself, that the figures were not living, and the impression they made on my feelings was powerful. I was often shown the place where nuns go who break their vows, as a warning. It is the hottest place in hell, and worse than that to which Protestants are assigned; because they are not so much to be blamed, as we were assured, as their ministers and the Bible, by which they are perverted. Whenever I was shut in that room, as I was several times, I prayed for *les âmes des fideles trespassees*; the souls of those faithful ones who have long been in purgatory, and whose feelings were of the most painful description, while I was alone with those frightful pictures.

Jane Ray was once put in and uttered the most dreadful shrieks. Some of the old nuns proposed to the Superior to have her gagged; "No," she replied, "go and let out that devil, she makes me sin more than all the rest." Jane could not endure the place; and she gave names to many of the worst figures in the pictures. On catechism-days she took a seat behind a cupboard door where the priest could not see her, while she faced the nuns, and would make us laugh. "You are not so attentive to your lesson as you used to be," he would say, while we tried to suppress our laughter. Jane would then hold up the first letter of some priest's name whom she had before compared with one of the faces in "hell," and so look that we could hardly preserve our gravity. I remember she named the wretch who was biting at the bars of hell, with a serpent gnawing his head, with chains and padlocks on, Father Dufresne; and she

would say—"Does he not look like him, when he comes in to catechism with his long solemn face, and begins his speeches with, "My children, my hope is that you have lived very devout lives?"

The first time I went to confession after taking the veil, I found abundant evidence that the priests did not treat even that ceremony, which is called a solemn sacrament, with respect enough to lay aside the shameless character they so often showed on other occasions. The confessor sometimes sat in the room for the examination of conscience, and sometimes in the Superior's room, and always alone except the nun who was confessing. He had a common chair placed in the middle of the floor, and instead of being placed behind a grate, or lattice, as in the chapel, had nothing before or around him.

A number of nuns usually confessed on the same day, but only one could be admitted into the room at a time. They took their places just without the door, on their knees, and went through the preparation prescribed by the rules of confession; repeating certain prayers, which occupy a considerable time. When one was ready, she rose from her knees, entered, and closed the door behind her, and no one dared touch the latch until she came out.

I shall not tell what was transacted at such times under the pretence of confessing, and receiving absolution from sin; far more sin was often incurred than pardon; and crimes of a deep dye were committed, while trifling irregularities in childish ceremonies, were treated as serious offences. I can persuade myself to speak plainly on such a subject, as I must offend the virtuous ear. I can only

that suspicious because their

Some ideas even such were regarded the fact there was oftening the aparting to make e most of us drew

During the the time between nothing or little. We were fatigued, debilitated, religious exercise miserable and humours of management from our

To mention a room than is her most all her work nearly become a opportunity to learn the other nuns.

ing what she did tricks, just as the my memory, with

She one day, in the floor placed brought upon her prior, as might have said it was a heir water enough to and what would

that suspicion cannot do any injustice to the priests, because their sins cannot be exaggerated.

Some idea may be formed of the manner in which even such women as many of my sister nuns, regarded the father confessors, when I state that there was often a contest among us, to avoid entering the apartment as long as we could; endeavouring to make each other go first, as that was what most of us dreaded.

During the long and tedious days which filled up the time between the occurrences I have mentioned, nothing or little took place to keep up our spirits. We were fatigued in body with labour, or with sitting, debilitated by the long continuance of our religious exercises, and depressed in feelings by our miserable and hopeless condition. Nothing but the humours of mad Jane Ray could rouse us for a moment from our languor and melancholy.

To mention all her devices, would require more room than is here allowed, and a memory of almost all her words and action for years. I had nearly become a favourite with her, and had opportunity to learn more of her character than most of the other nuns. As this may be learned from hearing what she did. I will here recount a few of her tricks, just as they happen to present themselves to my memory, without regard to the order of time.

She one day, in an unaccountable humour sprinkled the floor plentifully with holy water, which brought upon her a severe lecture from the Superior, as might have been expected. The Superior said it was a heinous offence: she had wasted holy water enough to save many souls from purgatory: and what would they not give for it! She then or-

dered Jane to sit in the middle of the floor, and when the priest came, he was informed of her offence. Instead, however, of imposing one of those penances to which she had been subjected, but with so little effect, he said to her, "Go to your place, Jane; we forgive you this time."

I was once set to iron aprons with Jane; aprons and pocket handkerchiefs are the only articles of dress which are ever ironed in the Convent. As soon as we were alone, she remarked, "Well we are free from the rules, while we are at this work;" and, although she knew she had no reason for saying so, she began to sing, and I soon joined her, and thus we spent the time, while we were at work, to the neglect of the prayers we ought to have said.

We had no idea that we were in danger of being overheard, but it happened that the Superior was overhead all the time, with several nuns, who were preparing for confession: she came down and said "How is this?" Jane Ray coolly replied, that we had employed our time in singing hymns, and referred to me. I was afraid to confirm so direct a falsehood, in order to deceive the Superior, though I had often told more injurious ones of her fabrication, or at her orders, and said very little in reply to Jane's request.

The Superior plainly saw the trick that was attempted, and ordered us both to the room for the examination of conscience, where we remained till night, without a mouthful to eat. The time was not, however, unoccupied; I received such a lecture from Jane as I have very seldom heard, and she was so angry with me, that we did not speak to each other for two weeks.

At length
against me, he
led to our be-
came perfect
friends as ever

One of the
to submit to,
which the Sup
could ever lau
She would pre
was sure it was

Some of the
ed by Jane wit
the oldest apron
received, and th
the new ones.

tole into the
served by the w
aprons, placing
they did not bel

in the morning
aste, as never
until they were
ridiculous appe
disturbed the lo

on such occasion
penances. I g
then Jane playe
object to give the
nt off the ragge

hom she most h
Jane once lost
enance for such
r five weeks.

At length she found something to complain of against me, had me subjected to a penance, which led to our begging each other's pardon, and we became perfectly satisfied, reconciled, and as good friends as ever.

One of the most disgusting penances we had ever to submit to, was that of drinking the water in which the Superior had washed her feet. Nobody could ever laugh at this penance except Jane Ray. She would pretend to comfort us, by saying she was sure it was better than mere plain clear water.

Some of the tricks which I remember, were played by Jane with nuns' clothes. It was a rule that the oldest aprons in use should go to the youngest received, and that the old nuns were to wear all the new ones. On four different occasions, Jane stole into the sleeping-room at night, and unobserved by the watch, changed a great part of the aprons, placing them by the beds of nuns to whom they did not belong. The consequence was, that in the morning they dressed themselves in such haste, as never to discover the mistake they made, until they were all ranged at prayers; and then the ridiculous appearance which many of them cut, disturbed the long devotions. I laugh so easy that, on such occasions, I usually incurred a full share of penances. I generally, however, got a new apron, when Jane played this trick; for it was part of her object to give the best aprons to her favourites, and cut off the ragged ones on some of the old nuns whom she most hated.

Jane once lost her pocket-handkerchief. The penance for such an offence is, to go without any for five weeks. For this she had no relish, and re-

quested me to pick one from some of the nuns on the way up stairs. I succeeded in getting two; this Jane said was one too many, and she thought it dangerous for either of us to keep it, lest a search should be made. Very soon the two nuns were complaining that they had lost their handkerchiefs, and wondering what could have become of them, as they were sure they had been careful. Jane seized an opportunity, and slipped one into a straw bed, where it remained until the bed was emptied to be filled with new straw.

As the winter was coming on, one year, she complained to me that we were not as well supplied with warm night-clothes, as two of the nuns she named, whom she said she "abominated." She soon after found means to get possession of their fine warm flannel night-gowns, one of which she gave to me, while the other was put on at bedtime. She presumed the owners would have a secret search for them; and in the morning hid them in the stove, after the fire had gone out, which was kindled a little before the hour of rising, and then suffered to burn down.

This she did every morning, taking them out at night through the winter. The poor nuns who owned the garments were afraid to complain of their loss, lest they should have some penance laid on them, and nothing was ever said about them. When the weather began to grow warm in the spring, Jane returned the night-gowns to the beds of the nuns from whom she had borrowed them, and they were probably as much surprised to find them again, as they had been before at losing them.

Jane once found an opportunity to fill her apron

with a quantity
came in her w
room, hid them
he informed m
to make our ele
of this is, to rep
fine days in suc
address for assis
fectionate, or a
permission, and
ays' feast on th
rise, they had a
o way to avoid th
pon ourselves.
e beds of the c
ace of the apple
uck pins in thos
When bedtime
getting into bed
d that subjected

CH

Ray's Tricks con
alking—Salted Cide
her tricks—Feigne

One night, Jane
eping-room for a
k, when she ha
te cloth on the e
woman dressed
out. This she
e, and placed it
the window, by

with a quantity of fine apples, called *fameuses*, which came in her way, and hastening up to the sleeping room, hid them under my bed. Then coming down, she informed me, and we agreed to apply for leave to make our elevens, as it is called. The meaning of this is, to repeat a certain round of prayers, for nine days in succession, to some saint we choose to address for assistance in becoming more charitable, affectionate, or something else. We easily obtained permission, and hastened upstairs to begin our nine days' feast on the apples; when, much to our surprise, they had all been taken away, and there was no way to avoid the disagreeable fate we had brought upon ourselves. Jane, therefore, began to search the beds of the other nuns: but not finding any trace of the apples, she became doubly vexed, and stuck pins in those that belonged to her enemies. When bedtime came, they were much scratched getting into bed, which made them break silence, and that subjected them to penances.

CHAPTER XIII.

the Ray's Tricks continued—The broomstick Ghost—Sleep-walking—Salted Oider—Changing Beds—Objects of some of her tricks—Feigned Humility—Alarm.

ONE night, Jane, who had been sweeping the sleeping-room for a penance, dressed up the broomstick, when she had completed her work, with a white cloth on the end, so tied as to resemble an old woman dressed in white, with long arms sticking out. This she stuck through a broken pane of glass, and placed it so that it appeared to be looking out the window, by the font of holy water. There

it remained till the nuns came up to bed. The first who stopped at the font, to dip the finger in, caught a glimpse of the singular object, and started with terror. The next was equally terrified, as she approached, and the next, and the next.

We all believed in ghosts; and it was not wonderful that such an object should cause alarm, especially as it was but a short time after the death of one of the nuns. Thus they went on, each getting a fright in turn, yet all afraid to speak. At length, one more alarmed, or with less presence of mind than the rest, exclaimed, "Oh, mon Dieu! je me me concherais pas!" When the night watch called out "Who's that?" she confessed she had broken silence, but pointed at the cause; and when all the nuns assembled at a distance from the window, Jane offered to advance boldly, and ascertain the nature of the apparition, which they thought a most resolute intention. We all stood looking on, when she stepped to the window, drew in the broomstick, and shewed us the ridiculous puppet which had alarmed so many superstitious fears.

Some of her greatest feats she performed as a sleep-walker. Whether she ever walked in her sleep or not, I am unable, with certainty, to say. She, however, often imposed upon the Superior and old nuns, by making them think so, when she knew she did not; and yet I cannot positively say that she always did. I have remarked that one of the old nuns was always placed in our sleeping room at night, to watch us. Sometimes she would be inattentive, and sometimes fall into a doze. Jane Ray often seized such times to rise from her bed, and walk about, occasionally seizing one

the nuns in bed. She generally seen awakened some of us from a vision to the floor many times, however, while compassion: if she were in and Jane displayed up the floor perceived that the r, she would be conscious of what, or standing still, or standing still. We were once a which was quite a never, on account denied the privilege next day, when a new drink, but it. Those of us al afraid to speak looked around, every, which the same manner. by surprise, uttering the salted ing across, would Ah tu casses la s (see.) and thus we soon of supporting i

the nuns in bed, in order to frighten her. This she generally effected; and many times we have been awakened by screams of terror. In our alarm, some of us frequently broke silence, and gave occasion to the Superior to lay us under penances. Many times, however, we escaped with a mere reprimand, while Jane usually received expressions of compassion: "Poor creature; she would not do if she were in perfect possession of her reason." And Jane displayed her customary artfulness, in keeping up the false impression. As soon as she perceived that the old nun was likely to observe her, she would throw her arms about, or appear unconscious of what she was doing; falling upon a bed, or standing stock-still, until exertions had been made to rouse her from her supposed lethargy. We were once allowed to drink cider at dinner, which was quite an extraordinary favour. Jane, however, on account of her negligence of all work, denied the privilege, which she much resented. The next day, when dinner arrived, we began to taste a new drink, but it was so salt we could not swallow it. Those of us who first discovered it, were almost afraid to speak; but we set down our cups, and looked around, till the others made the same discovery, which they all soon did, and most of them in the same manner. Some, however, at length, taking by surprise, uttered some ludicrous exclamation respecting the salted cider, and then an old nun, springing across, would cry out—
Ah tu casses la silence." (Ah! you've broken silence.)
 And thus we soon got a laughing, beyond our power of supporting it. At recreation that day, the



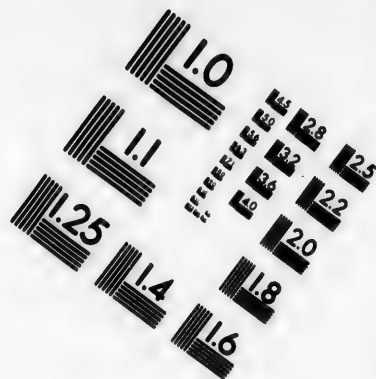
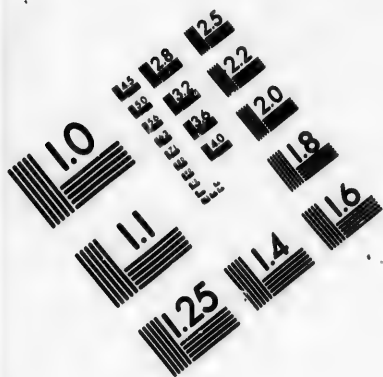
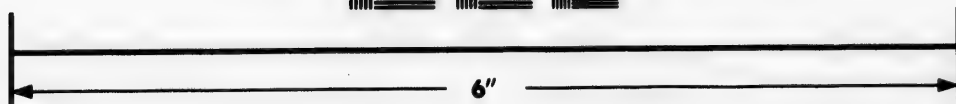
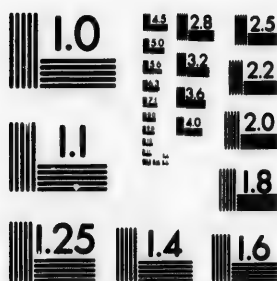


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

18
20
22
25
28
32
36
40
45
50
56
63
71
80
90
100

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

first question asked by many of us was, "How did you like your cider?"

Jane Ray never had a fixed place to sleep in. When the weather began to grow warm in the spring, she usually pushed some bed out of its place, near a window, and put her own beside it; and when the winter approached, she would choose a spot near the stove, and occupy it with her bed, in spite of all remonstrance. We were all convinced that it was generally best to yield to her.

She was often set to work in different ways; but, whenever she was dissatisfied with doing any thing, would devise some trick that would make the Superior or old nuns drive her off; and whenever any suspicion was expressed of her being in her right mind, she would say that she did not know what she was doing; and all the difficulty arose from her repeating prayers too much, which wearied and distracted her mind.

I was once directed to assist Jane Ray in shifting the beds of the nuns. When we came to those of some of the sisters whom she most disliked, she said now we will pay them for some of the penances we have suffered on their account; and taking some thistles, she mixed them with the straw. At night the first of them that got into bed felt the thistles and cried out. The night-watch exclaimed as usual, "You are breaking silence there." And then another screamed as she was scratched by the thistles and another. The old nun then called on all who had broken silence to rise, and ordered them to kneel under their beds as a penance, which they all complied with. Jane and I afterwards confes-

when it was
which the

Those nuns
mad Jane Ray
who had the
form of the
ally those w
by disclosing
in confidence
"saints" she

hers say, that
a trick did sh
painful to the
number of the
Of all the nuns
by her with so
she was always
and to have ca
upon by us as
of the crime w
willingly, took
contrary, being
helves, in case
mistress, thou
guilt, as unwill
impossible for
ten spoken with
always in terms

The Superior
for mad Jane Ray
really believed
clined to think,
some of her tricks
minds from the p

when it was all over, and took some trifling penance which the priest imposed.

Those nuns who fell most under the displeasure of mad Jane Ray, as I have intimated before, were those who had the reputation of being most ready to inform of the most trifling faults of others, and especially those who acted without any regard to honour, by disclosing what they had pretended to listen to in confidence. Several of the worst-tempered "saints" she held in abhorrence; and I have heard her say, that such and such she abominated. Many a trick did she play upon these, some of which were painful to them in their consequences, and a good number of them have never been traced to this day. Of all the nuns, however, none other was regarded by her with so much detestation as St. Hypolite; for she was always believed to have betrayed St. Frances, and to have caused her murder. She was looked upon by us as the voluntary cause of her death, and of the crime which those of us committed, who unwillingly, took part in her execution. We, on the contrary, being under the worst of fears for ourselves, in case of refusing to obey our masters and mistress, thought ourselves chargeable with less guilt, as unwilling assistants in a scene which it was impossible for us to prevent or delay. Jane has often spoken with me of the suspected informer, and always in terms of the greatest bitterness.

The Superior sometimes expressed commiseration for mad Jane Ray, but I never could tell whether she really believed her insane or not. I was always inclined to think, that she was willing to put up with some of her tricks, because they served to divert our minds from the painful and depressing circumstances

in which we were placed. I knew the Superior's powers and habits of deception also, and that she would deceive us as willingly as any one else.

Sometimes she proposed to send Jane to St. Anne's a place near Quebec, celebrated for the pilgrimages made to it by persons differently afflicted. It is supposed that some peculiar virtue exists there, which will restore health to the sick; and I have heard stories told in corroboration of the common belief. Many lame and blind persons, with others, visit St. Anne's every year, some of whom may be seen travelling on foot, and begging their food. The Superior would sometimes say that it was a pity that a woman like Jane Ray, capable of being so useful, should be unable to do her duties, in consequence of a malady which she thought might be cured by a visit to St. Anne's.

Yet to St. Anne's Jane was never sent, and her wild and various tricks continued as before. The rules of silence, which the others were so scrupulous in observing, she set at nought every hour; and for other rules, she regarded them with as little respect when they stood in her way. She would now and then step out and stop the clock by which our exercises were regulated, and sometimes in this manner lengthened out our recreation till near twelve. At last the old nuns began to watch against such a trick, and would occasionally go out to see if the clock was going.

She once made a request that she might not dine with the other nuns, which was granted, as it seemed to proceed from a spirit of genuine humility, which made her regard herself as unworthy of our society.

It being most convenient, she was sent to the Superior's table.

perior's table did not at first in this manner, but better food than was used to be always first suspected.

She was once under the sleep, been assigned the Superior, or nothing, de some employment.

She declared

long, as we might that the stove burned in the warmed in the floor of our in a direction our stove was carried the hole was left red to our beds, prayers, we were a fire, which burnt threw sparks all around was burning, and of the penance kept us silent.

The utmost command solemnly vowed when if it was on fire could not represent the cause, for the fire and it was found that little in the room

perior's table, to make her meals after her; and it did not at first occur to the Superior that Jane, in this manner, profited by the change, by getting much better food than the rest of us. Thus there seemed to be always something deeper than any body at first suspected, at the bottom of every thing she did.

She was once directed to sweep a community-room, under the sleeping-chamber. This office had before been assigned to the other nuns, as a penance; but the Superior, considering that Jane Ray, did little or nothing, determined thus to furnish her with some employment.

She declared to us that she would not sweep it long, as we might soon be assured. It happened that the stove by which the community-room was warmed in the winter, had its pipe carried through the floor of our sleeping chamber, and thence crossed in a direction opposite that in which the pipe of our stove was carried. It being then warm weather, the hole was left unstopped. After we had all retired to our beds, and while engaged in our silent prayers, we were suddenly alarmed by a bright blaze of fire, which burst from the hole in the floor, and threw sparks all around us. We thought the building was burning, and uttered cries of terror, regardless of the penances, the fear of which generally kept us silent.

The utmost confusion prevailed; for although we had solemnly vowed never to flee from the Convent, even if it was on fire, we were extremely alarmed, and could not repress our feelings. We soon learnt the cause, for the flames ceased in a moment or two, and it was found that mad Jane Ray, after sweeping the floor in the room beneath, had stuck a quantity of

wet powder on the end of her broom, thrust it up through the hole in the ceiling into our apartment, and with a lighted paper set it on fire.

The date of this alarm I must refer to a time soon after that of the election riots; for I recollect that she found means to get possession of some of the powder which was prepared at that time for an emergency to which some thought the Convent was exposed.

She once asked for pen and paper, and then the Superior told her if she wrote to her friends she must see it. She replied that it was for no such purpose: she wanted to write her confession, and thus make it once for all. She wrote it, handed it to the priest, and he gave it to the Superior, who read it to us. It was full of offences which she had never committed, evidently written to throw ridicule on confessions, and one of the most ludicrous productions I ever saw.

Our bedsteads were made with very narrow boards laid across them, on which the beds were laid. One day, while we were in the bedchambers together, she proposed that we should misplace these boards. This was done, so that at night nearly a dozen nuns fell down upon the floor on getting into bed. A good deal of confusion naturally ensued, but the authors were not discovered. I was so conscience-stricken, however, that a week afterwards, while we were examining our consciences together, I told her I must confess the sin the next day. She replied, "Do you like, but you will be sorry for it."

The next day, when we came before the Superior, I was just going to kneel and confess, when she almost without giving me time to shut the door

threw herself
the trick, and
me for the s.

There was
whom we used
night, Jane I
caps of several
rest. In the
and such a scene
blamed by La
by some of the
enraged, that she
took her by the
want to come to
ruined. Jane
the confusion, to
quite severely, and
ended to kill some
For a time Jan
e, that the Super
at morning pray
y to sleep in the
t, she was forbid
leaving it, and
a nap on the
y, but threatened
gh she was mis
the times oversle
to be more stri
ming, whether
Then the question
but when it was
by name, as,
Saint Eustace, i
ad to reply.

threw herself at the Superior's feet and confessed the trick, and a penance was immediately laid upon me for the sin I had concealed.

There was an old nun who was a famous talker, whom we used to call La Mere (Mother). One night, Jane Ray got up, and secretly changed the caps of several of the nuns; and hers among the rest. In the morning there was great confusion, and such a scene seldom occurred. She was severely blamed by La Mere, having been informed against by some of the nuns: and at last became so much enraged, that she attacked the old woman, and even took her by the throat. La Mere called on all present to come to her assistance, and several nuns interfered. Jane seized the opportunity afforded in the confusion, to beat some of her worst enemies quite severely, and afterward said, that she had intended to kill some of the rascally informers.

For a time Jane made us laugh so much at prayers, that the Superior forbade her going down with us at morning prayers; and she took the opportunity to sleep in the morning. When this was found out, she was forbidden to get into her bed again after leaving it, and then she would creep under it and take a nap on the floor. This she told us of one day, but threatened us if we ever betrayed her. At length she was missed at breakfast, as she would sometimes oversleep herself, and the Superior began to be more strict, and always inquired, in the morning, whether Jane Ray was in her place.

When the question was general none of us answered; but when it was addressed to some nun near by name, as, "Saint Eustace, is Jane Ray in her place?" then she would reply.

Of all the scenes that occurred during my stay in the Convent, there was none which excited the delight of Jane more than one which took place in the chapel one day at mass, though I never had any particular reason to suppose that she had brought it about.

Some person unknown to me to this day, had put some substance or other, of a most nauseous smell, into the hat of a little boy, who attended at the altar, and he, without observing the trick, put it upon his head. In the midst of the ceremonies he approached some of the nuns, who were almost suffocated with the odour; and as he occasionally moved from place to place, some of them began to beckon to him to stand further off and to hold their noses, with looks of disgust. The boy was quite unconscious of the cause of the difficulty, and paid them no attention, but the confusion soon became so great through the distress of some, and the laughing of others, that the Superior noticed the circumstance, and beckoned the boy to withdraw.

All attempts, however, to engage us in any work, prayer, or meditation, were found ineffectual. Whenever the circumstances in the chapel came to mind we would laugh out. We had got into such a state that we could not easily restrain ourselves. The Superior, yielding to necessity, allowed us recreation for the whole day.

The Superior used sometimes to send Jane to instruct the novices in their English prayers. She would proceed to the task with all seriousness; but sometimes chose the most ridiculous, as well as irrelevant passages from the songs, and other things which she had sometimes learned, which would

as, who un-
rhymes, I re-

"The I

Upon th

Jane for a

night would r

to talk with m

return again v

She would t

and such as sh

laugh so loud,

ing with beggi

One winter's

after she had d

of us, "my fing

again."

The next day

because it was a

ized with a fit

taken up appare

ed. She compl

course of the day

ood was denied

stocking under

to it from the ta

er, and relieved

One of the thin

r, was a disposi

amed to be winn

he would never

he into some diff

We were allowe

found her sup

piece she could

us, who understood her, laughing. One of her rhymes, I recollect, began with—

"The Lord of love—look from above,
Upon this turkey hen!"

Jane for a time slept opposite me, and often in the night would rise, unobserved, and slip into my bed, to talk with me, which she did in a low whisper, and return again with equal caution.

She would tell me of the tricks she had played, and such as she meditated, and sometimes make me laugh so loud, that I had much to do in the morning with begging pardons and doing penances.

One winter's day, she was sent to light a fire; but after she had done so, remarked privately to some of us, "my fingers were so cold—you'll see if I do it again."

The next day there was a great stir in the house, because it was said that mad Jane Ray had been seized with a fit while making a fire, and she was taken up apparently insensible, and conveyed to her bed. She complained to me, who visited her in the course of the day, that she was likely to starve, as food was denied her; and I was persuaded to pin stocking under my dress, and secretly put food to it from the table. This I afterwards carried to her, and relieved her wants.

One of the things which I had blamed Jane most for, was a disposition to quarrel with any nun who seemed to be winning the favour of the Superior. She would never rest until she had brought such a matter into some difficulty.

We were allowed but little soap; and Jane, when she found her supply nearly gone, would take the first piece she could find. One day there was a gen-

eral search made for a large piece that was missed; when, soon after I had been searched, Jane Ray passed me, and slipped it into my pocket; she soon after was searched herself, and then secretly came for it again.

While I recall these particulars of our Nunnery, and refer so often to the conduct and language of one of the nuns, I cannot speak of some things which I believed or suspected, on account of my want of sufficient knowledge. But it is a pity you have not Jane Ray for a witness; she knew many things of which I am ignorant. She must be in possession of facts that should be known. Her long residence in the Convent, her habits of roaming about it, and of observing every thing, must have made her acquainted with things which would be heard with interest. I always felt as if she knew every thing. She would often go and listen, or look through the cracks into the Superior's room, while any of the priests were closeted with her, and sometimes would come and tell me what she witnessed. I felt myself bound to confess on such occasions, and always did so.

She knew, however, that I only told it to the priest or to the Superior, and without mentioning the name of my informant, which I was at liberty to withhold, so that she was not found out. I often said to her, "Don't tell me, Jane, for I must confess it." She would reply, "It is better for you to confess it than for me." I thus became, even against my will, informed of scenes supposed by the actors of them to be secret.

Jane Ray once persuaded me to accompany her into the Superior's room, to hide with her under the sofa, and await the appearance of a visitor whom

expected, between them the Superior when, fearing which prevailed at length. thus afforded

I was passing where I had of my shoe h I rose again, caused my fall small square to raise, and was not light be noticed by prior; so, closing first I could not but it afterward to the subterranean never could be many of the priests appeared among us the gates were come up to the our; then up to where they chose before us.

I afterwards as correct, and that in this manner the end towards the depth under the cell

expected, that we might over-hear what passed between them. We had been long concealed, when the Superior came in alone, and sat for some time; when, fearing she might detect us in the stillness which prevailed, we began to repent of our temerity. At length, however, she suddenly withdrew, and thus afforded us a welcome opportunity to escape.

I was passing one day through a part of the cellar, where I had not often occasion to go, when the toe of my shoe hit something. I tripped and fell down, I rose again, and holding my lamp to see what had caused my fall, I found an iron ring, fastened to a small square trap-door. This I had the curiosity to raise, and saw four or five steps down, but there was not light enough to see more, and I feared to be noticed by somebody and reported to the Superior; so, closing the door again, I left the spot. At first I could not imagine the use of such a passage; but it afterwards occurred to me that it might open to the subterranean passage to the Seminary; for I never could before account for the appearance of many of the priests, who often appeared and disappeared among us, particularly at night, when I knew the gates were closed. They could, as I now saw, come up to the door of the Superior's room at any hour; then up the stairs into our sleeping-room, or where they chose. And often they were in our beds before us.

I afterwards ascertained that my conjectures were correct, and that a secret communication was kept up in this manner between these two institutions, at the end towards Notre Dame street, at a considerable depth under ground. I often afterwards met priests in the cellar, when sent there for coals and

other articles, as they had to pass up and down the common cellar stairs on their way.

My wearisome daily prayers and labours, my pain of body and depression of mind, which were so much increased by penances I have suffered, and those which I constantly feared, and the feelings of shame, remorse, and horror, which sometimes arose, brought me to a state which I cannot describe.

In the first place, my frame was enfeebled by the uneasy postures I was required to keep for so long a time during prayers. This alone, I thought, was sufficient to undermine my health and destroy my life. An hour and a half every morning I had to sit on the floor of the community-room, with my feet under me, my body bent forward, and my head hanging on one side, in a posture expressive of great humility, it is true, but very fatiguing to keep for such an unreasonable length of time. Often I found it impossible to avoid falling asleep in this posture which I could do without detection, by bending a little lower than usual. The signal to rise, or the noise made by the rising of the other nuns, then woke me, and I got up with the rest unobserved.

Before we took the posture just described we had to kneel for a long time without bending the body, keeping quite erect, with the exception of the knees only, with the hands together before the breast. This I found the most distressing attitude for me, and never assumed it without feeling a sharp pain in my chest, which I often thought would soon lead me to my grave—that is, to the great common receptacle for the dead under the chapel. And this upright kneeling posture we were obliged to resume as soon as we rose from the half-sitting posture first

mentioned, and near to morning service.

I found that often did I sit in silence on meditations, portance what thing to tell I ed off very well.

Jane Ray and myself with work for them, would rectly I begin and my thought to another."

Sometimes I often the priest sleeping in the them proposed which is often time.

My close confinement want of opportunity have proved me had I not been active labours I was chiefly cause some of the health.

The events within about five months went as a nun; vision, as I knew the world about

mentioned, so that I usually felt myself exhausted and near to fainting before the conclusion of the morning services.

I found the meditations extremely tedious, and often did I sink into sleep, while we were all seated in silence on the floor. When required to tell my meditations, as it was thought to be of no great importance what we said, I sometimes found I had nothing to tell but a dream, and told that, which passed off very well.

Jane Ray appeared to be troubled still more than myself with wandering thoughts; and when blamed for them, would reply, "I begin very well; but directly I begin to think of some old friend of mine, and my thoughts go a wandering from one country to another."

Sometimes I confessed my falling asleep; and often the priests have talked to me about the sin of sleeping in the time of meditation. At last, one of them proposed to me to prick myself with a pin, which is often done, and so rouse myself for a time.

My close confinement in the Convent, and the want of opportunities to breathe the open air, might have proved more injurious to me than they did, had I not been employed a part of my time in more active labours than those of sewing, &c., to which I was chiefly confined. I took part occasionally in some of the heavy work, as washing, &c.

The events which I am now to relate occurred about five months after my admission into the Convent as a nun; but I cannot fix the time with precision, as I knew not of any thing that took place in the world about the same period. The circumstances

I clearly remember ; but as I have elsewhere remarked, we were not accustomed to keep any account of time.

Information was given to us one day, that another novice was to be admitted among us ; and we were required to remember and mention her often in our prayers, that she might have faithfulness in the service of her holy spouse. No information was given us concerning her beyond this fact ; not a word about her age, name, or nation. On all similar occasions the same course was pursued, and all that the nuns ever learnt concerning one another was what they might discover by being together, and which usually amounted to little or nothing.

When the day of her admission arrived, though I did not witness the ceremony in the chapel, it was a gratification to us all on one account, because we were always released from labour, and enjoyed a great recreation day.

Our new sister, when she was introduced to the "holy" society of us "saints," proved to be young, of about the middle size, and very good looking for a Canadian : for I soon ascertained that she was one of my own countrywomen. The Canadian females are generally not handsome. I never learnt her name nor any thing of her history. She had chosen St. Martin for her nun name. She was admitted in the morning, and appeared melancholy all day. This I observed was always the case ; and the remarks made by others, led me to believe that they, and all they had seen, had felt sad and miserable for a longer or shorter time. Even the Superior, as it may be recollected, confessed to me that she experienced the same feelings when she was received. When

bed-time arrived, the rest of us left the room. The nuns were dressed, and I was left alone, and composed myself to sleep. A most piercing cry came from our new sister, as if by one impulse, especially when she was greatly excited. Many voices spoke of grief, compassion, and night-watch to the rules and penance, and she could do nothing. I heard a man cry, and the nuns, I had felt the same at the time. The nuns afterwards, the Superior soon made her command her, and she went to the cells. The young girl who abode there was acquainted with her, and she was to act a part among the novices. The daughter had been remarkable for the liveliness.

bed-time arrived, she proceeded to the chamber with the rest of us, and was assigned a bed on the side of the room opposite my own, and a little beyond. The nuns were all soon in bed, the usual silence ensued, and I was making my customary mental prayer, and composing myself to sleep, when I heard the most piercing and heart-rending shrieks proceed from our new comrade. Every nun seemed to rise as if by one impulse, for no one could hear such sounds, especially in such total silence, without being greatly excited. A general noise succeeded, for many voices spoke together, uttering cries of surprise, compassion or fear. It was in vain for the night-watch to expect silence; for once we forgot rules and penances, and gave vent to our feelings, and she could do nothing but call for the Superior. I heard a man's voice mingled with the cries and shrieks of the nun. Father Quiblier, of the Seminary, I had felt confident, was in the Superior's room at the time when we retired; and several of the nuns afterwards assured me that it was he. The Superior soon made her appearance, and in a harsh manner commanded silence. I heard her threaten and scolding her, and then say, "You are no better than any body else, and if you do not obey, you shall be sent to the cells."

The young girl was taken into the Convent during my abode there, under peculiar circumstances. I was acquainted with the whole affair, as I was employed to act a part in it.

Among the novices was a young lady, of about sixteen, the daughter of an old rich Canadian. She had been remarkable for nothing that I know of, except the liveliness of her disposition. The Su-

perior once expressed to us a wish to have her take the veil, though the girl herself had never any such intention that I know of. Why the Superior wished to receive her I could only conjecture. One reason might have been, that she expected to receive a considerable sum from her father. She was, however, strongly desirous of having the girl in our community, and one day said—"Let us take her in by a trick, and tell the old man she felt too humble to take the veil in public."

Our plans then being laid, the unsuspecting girl was induced by us, in sport, as we told her and made her believe, to put on such a splendid robe as I had worn on my admission, and to pass through some of the ceremonies of taking the veil. After this she was seriously informed, that she was considered as having entered the Convent in earnest, and must henceforth bury herself to the world, and she would never be allowed to leave it. We put her on a nun's dress, though she wept, and refused, and expressed the greatest repugnance. The Superior threatened and promised, and flattered in turns, until the poor girl had to submit; but her appearance long showed that she was a nun only by compulsion.

In obedience to the directions of the Superior we exerted ourselves to make her contented, especially when she was first received, when we got round her and told her we had felt so for a time, but had since become acquainted with the happiness of a nun's life, were perfectly content, and would not be willing to leave the Convent. An exception seemed to be made in her favour, in one respect, for I believe no criminal attempt was made

her, until she entered the nunnery.

Soon after her entry into the nunnery, inquiries about her plausibility were made, and she had wished to have dared.

We told the Superior that we all agreed to become a nun, and to appear before the community. The benefit of this act of obedience must be truly great, and she furnishes a good example as receiving the account. The very word I was a great blessing to pay more to the convent. After being soon to re-enter the Convent, which was the greatest of all, and that her father saw her, much imposition passed in the Convent when she was the youngest girl, and her hood, was on

her, until she had been for some time an inmate of the nunnery.

Soon after her reception, or rather her forcible entry into the Convent, her father called to make inquiries about his daughter. The Superior first spoke with him herself, and then called us to repeat her plausible story, which I did with accuracy. If I had wished to say any thing else, I never should have dared.

We told the foolish old man, that his daughter, whom we all affectionately loved, had long desired to become a nun, but had been too humble to wish to appear before spectators, and had, at her own desire, been favoured with a private admission into the community.

The benefit conferred upon himself and his family, by this act of self-consecration, I reminded him, must be truly great and valuable; as every family who furnishes a priest, or a nun, is justly looked upon as receiving the peculiar favour of heaven on that account. The old Canadian, firmly believing every word I was forced to tell him, took the event as a great blessing, and expressed the greatest readiness to pay more than the customary fee to the convent. After the interview, he withdrew, promising soon to return, and pay a handsome sum to the Convent, which he performed with all despatch and the greatest cheerfulness. The poor girl never heard that her father had taken the trouble to call and see her, much less did she know any thing of the imposition passed upon him. She remained in the Convent when I left it.

The youngest girl who ever took the veil of our order, was only fourteen years of age, and con-

sidered very pious. She lived but a short time. I was told that she was ill-treated by the priests, and believed her death was in consequence.

CHAPTER XIV.

Influencing Novices—Difficulty of convincing persons from the United States—Tale of the Bishop in the City—The Bishop in the Convent—The Prisoners in the Cells—Practice in Singing—Narratives—Jane Ray's Hymns—The Superior's best Trick.

It was considered a great duty to exert ourselves to influence novices in favour of the Roman Catholic religion; and different nuns were, at different times, charged to do what they could, by conversation, to make favourable impressions on the minds of some, who were, particularly indicated to us by the Superior. I often heard it remarked, that those who were influenced with the greatest difficulty, were young ladies from the United States; and on some of those, great exertions were made.

Cases in which citizens of the States were said to have been converted to the Roman Catholic faith, were sometimes spoken of, and always as if they were considered highly important.

The Bishop, as we were told, was in the public square, on the day of an execution, when, as he saw a stranger looked at him in some peculiar manner, which made him confidently believe God intended to have him converted by his means. When he went home he wrote a letter for him, and the next day he found him again in the same place, and gave him the letter, which led to his becoming a Roman Catholic. This man, it was added, proved to be a citizen of the States.

The Bishop dignified on a such a manner public.

One day I saw because he had shown evident marked: "Theionate mass."

you not ashamed he was rewarded

But it might free from the cr many priests to entertaining such had good reason I was often rec com of the prese mentioned.

One night, not ere for that pur onths of my we equal, at about ha t into bed, the ngs over the Sup see who was the mal given, wh peculiar kind of h th. I answered n opened the do sent Bishop of a Novice or a I answered, He then requeste

The Bishop, as I have remarked, was not very dignified on all occasions, and sometimes acted in such a manner as would not have appeared well in public.

One day I saw him preparing for mass ; and because he had some difficulty in getting on his robes, showed evident signs of anger. One of the nuns remarked : " The Bishop is going to perform a passionate mass." Some of the others exclaimed ; " Are you not ashamed to speak thus of my lord ?" And he was rewarded with a penance.

But it might be hoped that the Bishop would be free from the crimes of which I have declared so many priests to have been guilty. I am far from entertaining such charitable opinions of him ; and had good reasons, after a time.

I was often required to sleep on a sofa, in the room of the present Superior, as I may have already mentioned.

One night, not long after I was first introduced there for that purpose, and within the first twelve months of my wearing the veil, having retired as usual, at about half past nine, not long after we had got into bed, the alarm-bell from without, which hangs over the Superior's bed was rung. She told me to see who was there ; and going down, I heard the signal given, which I have before mentioned, a peculiar kind of hissing sound made through the cloth. I answered with a low " Hum—hum ;" and she opened the door. It was Bishop Lartigue, the present Bishop of Montreal. He said to me, " Are you a Novice or a Received ?" meaning a Received. I answered, a " Received."

He then requested me to conduct him to the Su-

perior's room, which I did. He went to the bed, drew the curtains behind him, and I lay down again upon the sofa, until morning, when the Superior called me, at an early hour, about daylight, and directed me to show him the door, to which I conducted him, and he took his departure.

I continued to visit the cellar frequently, to carry up coal for the fires, without anything more than a general impression that there were two nuns somewhere imprisoned in it. One day, while there on my usual errand, I saw a nun standing on the right of the cellar, in front of one of the cell doors I had before observed; she was apparently engaged with something within. This attracted my attention. The door appeared to close in a small recess, and was fastened with a stout iron bolt on the outside, the end of which was secured by being let into a hole in the stonework which formed the posts. The door, which was of wood, was sunk a few inches beyond the stonework, which rose and formed an arch overhead. Above the bolt was a small window, supplied with a fine grating, which swung open, a small bolt having been removed from it, on the outside. The nun I had observed seemed to be whispering with some person within, through the little window: but I hastened to get my coal, and left the cellar, presuming that was the prison. When I visited the place again, being alone, I ventured to the spot, determined to learn the truth, presuming that the imprisoned nuns, of whom the Superior had told me on my admission, were confined there. I spoke at the window where I had seen the nun standing, and heard a voice reply in a whisper. The aperture was so small, and the place so dark, that I could

see nobody; I remained there until I discovered, to my surprise, that I could do no

My curiosity could about the inquiries of the Superior, Bishop, and the other nuns, but I discovered that the prison was not with, and I had been confined there, and every time I over learn, and some conjecture with some of the positions of the nuns, whose names I did not know, and who were Some of the most of their sufferings. I often spoke to the nuns in their cells, when I ventured to stop there. Besides, I proposed to converse with them, and I considered at when I could get a better character of persons who were in feeble health. I occasionally saw

see nobody; but I learnt that a poor wretch was confined there a prisoner. I feared that I might be discovered, and after a few words, which I thought would do no harm, I withdrew.

My curiosity was now alive to learn everything I could about so mysterious a subject. I made a few inquiries of St. Xavier, who only informed me that they were punished for refusing to obey the Superior, Bishop, and Priests. I afterwards found that the other nuns were acquainted with the fact I had just discovered. All I could learn, however, was that the prisoner in the cell whom I had just spoken with, and another in the cell just beyond, had been confined there several years without having been taken out; but their names, connexions, offences, and everything else relating to them, I could never learn, and am still as ignorant of as ever. Some conjectured that they had refused to comply with some of the rules of the Convent or regulations of the Superior; others, that they were heiresses whose property was desired for the Convent, and who would not consent to sign deeds of conveyance. Some of the nuns informed me, that the severity of their sufferings arose from fear of supernatural beings.

I often spoke with one of them in passing near their cells, when on errands in the cellar, but never ventured to stop long, or to press my enquiries very far.

Besides, I found her reserved, and little disposed to converse freely, a thing I could not wonder at when I considered her situation, and the character of persons around her. She spoke like a man in feeble health, and of broken spirits. I occasionally saw other nuns speaking to them,

particularly at meal times, when they were regularly furnished with food, which was such as we ourselves ate.

Their cells were occasionally cleaned, and then the doors were opened. I never looked into them, but was informed that the ground was their only floor. I presumed that they were furnished with straw to lie upon, as I always saw a quantity of old straw scattered about that part of the cellar, after the cells had been cleaned. I once inquired of one of them whether they could converse together, and she replied that they could, through a small opening between their cells, which I could not see.

I once inquired of the one I spoke with in passing, whether she wanted anything, and she replied, "Tell Jane Ray I want to see her a moment if she can slip away." When I went up I took an opportunity to deliver my message to Jane, who concerted with me a signal to be used in future, in case a similar request should be made through me. This was a sly wink at her with one eye accompanied with a slight toss of the head. She then sought an opportunity to visit the cellar, and was soon able to hold an interview with the poor prisoners, without being noticed by any one but myself. I afterwards learnt that mad Jane Ray was not so mad but she could feel for those miserable beings, and carried through measures for their comfort. She would often visit them with sympathizing words, and when necessary, conceal part of her food while at table and secretly convey it into their dungeons. Some times we would combine for such an object; and have repeatedly aided her in thus obtaining a large supply of food than they had been able to obtain from others.

I frequen
the cells,
about them,
cellar, and t
them and s
some brief re
ticular chang
one with whom
perfectly well
supposed she
could not tell
remember tha
when I wishe
showed that ab
sent, "Oh, the
have been tol
nglish.

It was impos
n about the
miserable creatu
ark, and I neve
their faces.
ove the middle
mption is the
inted to lay ou
the Convent on
ected to lay by
ular orders we
ments for sever
d was ever said
the cells.
had not been
sted of the Sup
aint Bon Paste

I frequently thought of the two nuns confined in the cells, and occasionally heard something said about them, but very little. Whenever I visited the cellar, and thought it safe, I went up to the first of them and spoke a word or two, and usually got some brief reply, without ascertaining that any particular change took place with either of them. The one with whom alone I ever conversed, spoke English perfectly well, and French I thought as well. I supposed she must have been well educated, for I could not tell which was her native language. I remember that she frequently used these words when I wished to say more to her, and which alone showed that she was constantly afraid of punishment, "Oh, there's somebody coming—do go away!" I have been told that the other prisoner also spoke English.

It was impossible for me to form any certain opinion about the size or appearance of those two miserable creatures, for their cells were perfectly dark, and I never caught the slightest glimpse even of their faces. It is probable they were women not above the middle size, and my reason for this presumption is the following: I was sometimes appointed to lay out the clean clothes for all the nuns of the Convent on Saturday evening, and was always directed to lay by two suits for the prisoners. Particular orders were given to select the largest sized garments for several tall nuns; but nothing of the kind was ever said in relation to the clothes for those in the cells.

I had not been long a veiled nun, before I requested of the Superior permission to confess to the saint Bon Pasteur," (Holy Good Shepherd) that

is, the mysterious and nameless nun whom I had heard of while a novice. I knew of several others who had confessed to her at different times, and of some who had sent their clothes to be touched by her when they were sick; and I felt a desire to unburden my heart of certain things, which I was loath to acknowledge to the Superior, or any of the priests.

The Superior made me wait a little until she could ascertain whether the "Saint Bon Pasteur" was ready to admit me; and, after a time, returned and told me to enter the old nuns' room. That apartment has twelve beds arranged like the berths of a ship by threes; and as each is broad enough to receive two persons, twenty-four may be lodged there, which was about the number of old nuns in the Convent during most of my stay in it. Near an opposite corner of the apartment was a large glass case, with no appearance of a door, or other opening, in any part of it; and in that case stood the venerable nun, in the dress of the community, with her thick veil spread over her face, so as to conceal it entirely. She was standing, for the place did not allow room for sitting, and moved a little, which was the only sign of life, as she did not speak. I fell upon my knees before her and began to confess some of my imperfections, which lay heavy upon my mind, imploring her aid and intercession, that I might be delivered from them. She appeared to listen to me with patience, but still never returned a word in reply. I became much affected as I went on; at length began to weep bitterly; and, when she withdrew, was in tears. It seemed to me that my heart was remarkably relieved after this exercise

and all the
tied, stri
the old nun
similar resu
the nameless
tion, were u

What is re
into that room
marked, that
were to be fo
by which she
tion rested up
of her frequen

A priest wou
each us to sin
r stir, as if it
idered, as a th

The instruct
ons of the wo
ven of the first
d to me, that a
ercise was ob
ise our spirits
pressed. Ma
the whole thing
ed those of us
gree of mirth
as so powerful
st. Sometime
me began; and
Jane Ray, you
fing excuse re
ling to join th
After being ur

and all the requests, I had made, I found, as I believed, strictly fulfilled. I often, afterwards, visited the old nuns' room for the same purpose, and with similar results; so that my belief in the sanctity of the nameless nun, and my regard for her intercession, were unbounded.

What is remarkable, though I repeatedly was sent into that room to dust it, or to put it in order, I remarked, that the glass case was vacant and no signs were to be found, either of the nun, or of the way by which she had left it! so that a solemn conclusion rested upon my mind, that she had gone on one of her frequent visits to heaven.

A priest would sometimes come in the day time to teach us to sing, and this was done with some parade or stir, as if it were considered, or meant to be considered, as a thing of importance.

The instructions, however, were entirely repetitions of the words and tunes, nothing being taught even of the first principles of the science. It appeared to me, that although hymns alone were sung, the exercise was chiefly designed for our amusement, to vivify our spirits a little, which were apt to become depressed. Mad Jane Ray certainly usually treated the whole thing as a matter of sport, and often excited those of us who understood English, to a great degree of mirth. She had a very fine voice, which was so powerful as generally to be heard above the rest. Sometimes she would be silent when the other nuns began; and the Superior would often call out, "Jane Ray, you don't sing." She always had some plausible excuse ready, and commonly appeared unwilling to join the rest.

After being urged or commanded by the Superior,

she would then strike some English song, or profane parody, which was rendered ten times more ridiculous by the ignorance of the lady Superior and the majority of the nuns. I cannot help laughing now when I remember how she used to stand with perfect composure, and sing,

"I wish I was married and nothing to rue,
With plenty of money and nothing to do."

"Jane Ray, you don't sing right," the Superior would exclaim." "Oh," she would reply with perfect coolness, that is the English for

"Seigneur Dieu de clemence,
Recois ce grand pecheur !"

and, as sung by her, a person ignorant of the language would naturally be imposed upon. It was extremely difficult for me to conceal my laughter. I have always had greater exertion to make in repressing it than most other persons ; and mad Jane Ray often took advantage of this.

Saturday evening usually brought with it much unpleasant work for some of us. We received Sacrament every Sunday ; and in preparation for it, on Saturday evening, we asked pardon of the Superior, and of each other, "for the scandal we had caused them since we last received the Sacrament," and then asked the Superior's permission to receive on the following day. She enquired of each nun, who necessarily asked her permission, whether she naming her as Saint somebody, had concealed any sin that should hinder her receiving it ; and if the answer was in the negative, she granted her permission.

On Saturday evening assembling for the right of stories, and telling novices happy," he of the world how many p novice you i to your home you are."

The Superior of the Convent, who were pretty g as may be pre the arts of teacher.

There was of an extraordinary pounds ; but so long, that i ble. We were from the count excited ; and in the Seminary, the Superior of the old orn will send it to bought it."

We all approved it. We all apparently might have had so often except and exa

On Saturdays we were catechised by a priest, being assembled in a community-room. He sat on the right of the door, in a chair. He often told us stories, and frequently enlarged on the duty of enticing novices into the nunnery. "Do you not feel happy," he would say, "now that you are safely out of the world, and sure of heaven? But remember how many poor people are yet in the world. Every novice you influence to take the black veil, will add to your honour in heaven. Tell them how happy you are."

The Superior played one trick while I was in the Convent, which always passed for one of the most admirable she ever carried into execution. We were pretty good judges in a case of this kind; for, as may be presumed, we were rendered familiar with the arts of deception under so accomplished a teacher.

There was an ornament on hand in the Nunnery, of an extraordinary kind, which was prized at ten pounds; but it had been made and exposed to view so long, that it became damaged and quite unsaleable. We were one day visited by an old priest from the country, who was evidently somewhat intoxicated; and as he withdrew to go to his lodgings in the Seminary, where the country priests often stay, the Superior conceived a plan for disposing of the old ornament. "Come," said she, "we will send it to the old priest, and swear he has bought it."

We all approved of the ingenious device, for it evidently might be classed among the pious frauds we had so often had recommended to us, both by precept and example; and the ornament was sent

to him the next morning, as his property when paid for. He soon came into the Convent, and expressed the greatest surprise that he had been charged with purchasing such a thing, for which he had no need and no desire.

The Superior heard his declaration with patience, but politely insisted that it was a fair bargain; and we then surrounded the old priest, with the strongest assertions that such was the fact, and that nobody would have thought of his purchasing it unless he had expressly engaged to take it. The poor old man was entirely put down. He was certain of the truth; but what could he do to resist or disprove a direct falsehood pronounced by the Superior of a Convent, and sworn to by all her holy nuns? He finally expressed his conviction that we were right; and was compelled to pay his money.

CHAPTER XV.

Frequency of the Priests' Visits to the Nunnery—Their Freedom and Crimes—Difficulty of learning their Names—Their Holy Retreat—Objections in our minds—Means used to counteract Conscience—Ingenuous Arguments.

Some of the priests from the Seminary were in the Nunnery every day and night, and often several at a time. I have seen nearly all of them at different times, though there are about one hundred and fifty in the district of Montreal. There was a difference in their conduct; though I believe every one of them was guilty of licentiousness; while not one did I ever see who maintained a character any way becoming the profession of a priest. Some were gross and degraded in a degree which few of my readers can ever have imagined; and I should

be unwilling of any one, tions. Few abominable of some of t vere punish hesitate to s although so sentiment o of the Congu mentioned, f loathed the p to submit, by them under

Some of th name, and th time, and at

They were but sometime in the orname names, with di names, thus l pered about fr erally known. seen before w

Many thing the case, mus word, until fu there are som knowledge of Montreal that draw from the not to be seen that they have

be unwilling to offend the eye, and corrupt the heart of any one, by an account of their words and actions. Few imaginations can conceive deeds so abominable as they practised, and often required of some of the poor women, under the fear of severe punishments, and even of death. I do not hesitate to say with the strongest confidence, that although some of the nuns became lost to every sentiment of virtue and honour, especially one of the Congregational Nunnery whom I have before mentioned, Saint Patrick, the greater part of them loathed the practices to which they were compelled to submit, by their Superior and priests, who kept them under so dreadful a bondage.

Some of the priests whom I saw I never knew by name, and the names of others I did not learn for a time, and at last learnt only by accident.

They were always called "Mon Pere," (my father) but sometimes when they had purchased something in the ornament-room, they would give their real names, with directions where it should be sent. Many names, thus learnt, and in other ways, were whispered about from nun to nun, and became pretty generally known. Several of the priests some of us had seen before we entered the Convent.

Many things of which I speak, from the nature of the case, must necessarily rest chiefly upon my own word, until further evidence can be obtained; but there are some facts for which I can appeal to the knowledge of others. It is commonly known in Montreal that some of the priests occasionally withdraw from their customary employments, and are not to be seen for some time; it being understood that they have retired for religious study, medita-

tion, and devotion, for the improvement of their hearts. Sometimes they are thus withdrawn from the world for weeks; but there is no fixed period.

This was a fact I knew before I took the veil; for it is a frequent subject of remark, that such or such a Father is on a "holy retreat." This is a term which conveys the idea of a religious seclusion from the world, for sacred purposes. On the re-appearance of a priest after such a period, in the church or the streets, it is natural to feel a peculiar impression of his devout character—an impression very different from that conveyed to the mind of one who knows matters as they really are. Suspicions have been indulged by some in Canada on this subject, and facts are known by at least a few. I am able to speak from personal knowledge; for I have been a nun of *Sœur Bourgeoise*.

The priests are liable, by their dissolute habits, to occasional attacks of disease, which render it necessary, or at least prudent, to submit to medical treatment.

In the Black Nunnery they find private accommodation, for they are free to enter one of the private hospitals whenever they please; which is a room set apart on purpose for the accommodation of the priests, and is called a retreat-room. But an excuse is necessary to blind the public, and this they find in the pretence they make of being in a "Holy Retreat." Many such cases have I known; and I can mention the names of priests who have been confined in this Holy Retreat. They are very carefully attended by the Superior and old nuns, and their diet consists mostly of vegetable soups, &c., with but little meat, and that fresh. I have seen

an instrument
that holy re-
purposes.

Father T
his holy ret
Nunnery
there at the s
frequently sh

I have ofte
deceived in m
the holiness c
pretended. T
y-mindedness
ices, I found
practices as wo
society in the w
hat of heaven
hem, I learnt

The only wa
tracted, was b
y the Superior
a mortal sin.
are told over a
penances, we
m to doubt th
g her vows an
were exhorte
fess them wit
severe penanc
ans of mortify
ing the tempt
a good degr
ness, when w
duty of doing

an instrument of surgery lying upon the table in that holy room, which is used only for particular purposes.

Father Tombeau, a Roman priest, was on one of his holy retreats about the time when I left the Nunnery. There are sometimes a number confined there at the same time. The victims of these priests frequently share the same fate.

I have often reflected how greivously I had been deceived in my opinions of a nun's condition?—All the holiness of their lives, I now saw was merely pretended. The appearance of sanctity and heavenly-mindedness which they had shown among us novices, I found was only a disguise to conceal such practices as would not be tolerated in any decent society in the world; and as for joy and peace like that of heaven, which I had expected to find among them, I learnt too well that they did not exist there.

The only way in which such thoughts were counteracted, was by the constant instructions given us by the Superior and priests, to regard every doubt as a mortal sin. Other faults we might have, as we are told over and over again, which though worthy penances, were far less sinful than these. For a nun to doubt that she was doing her duty in fulfilling her vows and oaths, was a heinous offence, and we were exhorted always to suppress our doubts, to confess them without reserve, and cheerfully submit to severe penances on account of them, as the only means of mortifying our evil dispositions, and resisting the temptations of the devil. Thus we learnt to a good degree to resist our minds and consciences, when we felt the rising of a question about the duty of doing anything required of us.

To enforce this upon us, they employed various means. Some of the most striking stories told us at catechism by the priests, were designed for this end. One of these I will repeat. "One day," as a priest assured us, who was hearing us say the catechism on Saturday afternoon, "as one Monsieur * * * *, a well known citizen of Montreal, was walking near the cathedral, he saw Satan giving orders to innumerable evil spirits who were assembled around him. Being afraid of being seen, and yet wishing to observe what was done, he hid himself where he could observe all that passed. Satan despatched his devils to different parts of the city, with directions to do their best for him ; and they returned in a short time, bringing in reports of their success in leading persons of different classes to the commission of various sins, which they thought would be agreeable to their master. Satan, however expressed his dissatisfaction, and ordered them out again ; but just then a spirit from the Black Nunnery came, who had not been seen before, and stated that he had been trying for seven years to persuade one of the nuns to doubt, and had just succeeded. Satan received the intelligence with the highest pleasure ; and turning to the spirits around him, said : ' You have not half done your work,—he has done much more than all of you.' "

In spite, however, of our instructions and warnings, our fears and penances, such doubts would intrude ; and I have often indulged them for a time, and at length, yielding to the belief that I was wrong in giving place to them, would confess them, and undergo with cheerfulness such new penances as was loaded with. Others too would occasionally

entertain and we all had b murder of Sa nuns would g punishments uncommon to piercing and t discipline.

Some of my against me, fo them as so mo would say, wit you know little ed ; in the fir rious doctrines. ment by some i le of a large c structions of th ractised upon t ess of the argu correct idea. T xamples, anec their doctrines, ver have learn en taught by v ect upon their air art and add r their subtlet ind, and persua seems to me th their hands. ice, I believe y at you do now. g one thing and

entertain and privately express such doubts; though we all had been most solemnly warned by the cruel murder of Saint Frances. Occasionally some of the nuns would go further, and resist the restraints of punishments imposed upon them; and it was not uncommon to hear screams, sometimes of a most piercing and terrific kind, from nuns suffering under discipline.

Some of my readers may feel disposed to exclaim against me, for believing things which will strike them as so monstrous and abominable. To such, I would say, without pretending to justify myself;—you know little of the position in which I was placed; in the first place, ignorant of any other religious doctrines, and in the second, met at every moment by some ingenious argument, and the example of a large community, who received all the instructions of the priests as of undoubted truth, and practised upon them. Of the variety and speciousness of the arguments used, you cannot have any correct idea. They were often so ready with replies, examples, anecdotes, and authorities, to enforce their doctrines, that it seemed to me as if they could never have learnt it all from books, but must have been taught by wicked spirits. Indeed, when I reflect upon their conversations, I am astonished at their art and address, and find it difficult to account for their subtlety and success in influencing my mind, and persuading me to anything they pleased. It seems to me that hardly anybody would be safe in their hands. If you were to go to confession to me, I believe you would feel very different from what you do now. They have such a way of avoiding one thing and speaking of another, of affirming

this, and doubting and disputing that, of quoting authorities, and speaking of wonders and miracles recently performed, in confirmation of what they teach, as familiarly known to persons whom they call by name, and whom they pretend to offer as witnesses, though they never give you an opportunity to speak with them,—these, and many other means, they use in such a way, that they always blinded my mind, and, I should think, would blind the minds of others.

CHAPTER XVI.

Treatment of young infants in the Convent—Talking in Sleep—Amusements—Ceremonies at the public Interment of deceased Nuns—Sudden disappearance of the Old Superior—Introduction of the new one—Superstition—Alarm of a nun—Difficulty of Communication with other Nuns.

It will be recollected, that I was informed immediately after receiving the veil, that infants were occasionally murdered in the Convent. I was one day in the nuns' private sick room, when I had an opportunity unsought for, of witnessing deeds of such a nature. It was, perhaps, a month after the death of St. Frances. Two little twin babes, the children of St. Catherine, were brought to a priest, who was in the room, for baptism. I was present while the ceremony was performed, with the Superior and several of the old nuns, whose names I never knew, they being called *Ma tant* (Aunt.)

The priests took turns in attending to confession and catechism in the Convent, usually three months at a time, though sometimes longer periods. The priest then on duty was Father Larkin. He is a good-looking European, and has a brother who is

Professor in the heads of the tism. When were taken, nuns, in the hand upon the that it could r the hand was the other, and was heard, a The greatest during this op long accustomed were then taken have mentioned me.

I afterwards in the same manner, in this scene I observed, as ever, especially trying a These were witnessed; and incident that I were were no p is subject; the y inmate of order of the e told, as well veiled nuns, e baptised and ad been called mentioned, o room at the t

Professor in the College. He put oil upon the heads of the infants, as is the custom before baptism. When he had baptised the children, they were taken, one after another, by one of the old nuns, in the presence of us all. She pressed her hand upon the mouth and nose of the first so tight that it could not breathe, and in a few minutes, when the hand was removed, it was dead. She then took the other, and treated it in the same way. No sound was heard, and both the children were corpses. The greatest indifference was shown by all present during this operation; for all, as I well knew, were long accustomed to such scenes. The little bodies were then taken into the cellar, thrown into the pit I have mentioned, and covered with a quantity of lime.

I afterwards saw a new-born infant treated in the same manner, in the same place; but the actors in this scene I choose not to name, nor the circumstances, as every thing connected with it is of a peculiarly trying and painful nature to my own feelings. These were the only instances of infanticide I witnessed; and it seemed to be merely owing to accident that I was then present. So far as I know there were no pains taken to preserve secrecy on this subject; that is, I saw no attempt made to keep any inmate of the Convent in ignorance of the murder of the children. On the contrary, others were told, as well as myself, on their first admission veiled nuns, that all infants born in the place were baptised and killed, without loss of time! and I had been called to witness the murder of the three I mentioned, only because I happened to be in the room at the time.

That others were killed in the same manner, during my stay in the nunnery, I am well assured.

How many there were I cannot tell, and having taken no account of those I heard of, I cannot speak with precision; I believe, however, that I learnt through nuns, that at least eighteen or twenty infants were smothered, and secretly buried in the cellar, while I was a nun.

One of the effects of the weariness of our bodies and minds, was our proneness to talk in our sleep. It was both ludicrous and painful to hear the nuns repeat their prayers in the course of the night, as they frequently did in their dreams. Required to keep our minds continually on the stretch, both in watching our conduct, in remembering the rules and our prayers, under the fear of the consequences of any neglect, when we closed our eyes in sleep, we often went over again the scenes of the day; and it was no uncommon thing for me to hear a nun repeat one or two of her long exercises in the dead of the night. Sometimes by the time she had finished, another, in a different part of the room, would happen to take a similar turn, and commence a similar recitation; and I have known cases in which several such unconscious exercises were performed, all within an hour or two.

We had now and then a recreation day, when we were relieved from our customary labour, and from all prayers except those for morning and evening, and the short ones said at every striking of the clock. The greater part of our time was then occupied with different games, particularly backgammon and draughts, and in such conversation as did not relate to our past lives, and the outside of the Convent. Some

times, however, such days by who would ec birthday of hi aints." We

Several nun the Conven as a consider any in propo the proportion there were alw and several inte When a Black if living, and ture, within ok in the hand ely admitted f and pray be given, I belie vent, but suc tion.

The living nun delivery of the ng informed, a is not there, e, our prayers y, as they will e of our decea the souls which them.

was customary a dead nun th often perform ul, for the g

times, however, our sports would be interrupted on such days by the entrance of one of the priests, who would come in and propose that his fete, the birthday of his patron saint, should be kept by "the saints." We saints!

Several nuns died at different times while I was in the Convent; how many, I cannot say, but there was a considerable number. I might rather say many in proportion to the number in the nunnery. The proportion of deaths I am sure was very large. There were always some in the nuns' sick-room, and several interments took place in the chapel.

When a Black Nun is dead, the corpse is dressed as if living, and placed in the chapel in a sitting posture, within the railing round the altar, with a book in the hand as if reading. Persons are then freely admitted from the street, and some of them kneel and pray before it. No particular notoriety is given, I believe, to this exhibition out of the convent, but such a case usually excites some attention.

The living nuns are required to say prayers for the delivery of their deceased sister from purgatory, being informed, as in all other such cases, that if the soul is not there, and has no need of our intercession, our prayers are in no danger of being thrown away, as they will be set down to the account of the souls of our deceased friends, or at least to that of the souls which have no acquaintances to pray for them.

It was customary for us occasionally to kneel before a dead nun thus seated in the chapel, and I often performed that task. It was always painful, for the ghastly countenance being seen

whenever I raised my eyes, and the feeling that the position and dress were entirely opposed to every idea of propriety in such a case, always made me melancholy.

The Superior sometimes left the Convent, and was absent for an hour, or several hours at a time, but we never knew of it until she had returned, and were not informed where she had been. I one day had reason to presume that she had recently paid a visit to the priests' farm, though I had not direct evidence that such was the fact. The priests' farm is a fine tract of land belonging to the Seminary, a little distance from the city, near the Lachine road, with a large old-fashioned edifice upon it. I happened to be in the Superior's room on the day alluded to, when she made some remark on the plainness and poverty of her furniture. I replied that she was not proud, and could not be dissatisfied on that account: she answered,—"No: but if I was, how much superior is the furniture at the priests' farm; the poorest room there, is furnished better than the best of mine."

I was one day mending the fire in the Superior's room, when a priest was conversing with her on the scarcity of money; and I heard him say that very little money was received by the priests for prayers, but that the principal part came with penances and absolutions.

One of the most remarkable and unaccountable things that happened in the Convent, was the disappearance of the old Superior. She had performed her customary part during the day, and behaved as usual, and appeared just as usual. She had shown no symptoms of ill health, met with no particular

scanty in
anxiety, or
We had no
she had exp
more than t
customary
missed us
manner. T
sprang from
usual, and
double line,
There, to our
out the Super
Bishop soon
formed us, th
ed to us, was
enjoined upon
which we paid
The lady he
at nuns, Saint
with swelled li
walking, and
word was dro
are the cause
d Superior. I
one of the n
d become of
myself, thou
ordered by o
tain any light
m confident,
get rid of her
ample oppor
the Ray, as usu

difficulty in conducting business, and no agitation, anxiety, or gloom had been noticed in her conduct. We had no reason to suppose that during that day she had expected anything particular to occur, any more than the rest of us. After the close of our customary labours and evening lectures, she dismissed us to retire to bed, exactly in her usual manner. The next morning the bell rang, we sprang from our beds, hurried on our clothes as usual, and proceeded to the community-room in double line, to commence the morning exercises. There, to our surprise, we found Bishop Lartigue; but the Superior was no where to be seen. The Bishop soon addressed us, instead of her, and informed us, that a lady near him, whom he presented to us, was now the Superior of the Convent, and enjoined upon us the same respect and obedience which we paid to her predecessor.

The lady he introduced to us was one of our oldest nuns, Saint Du***, a very large, fleshy woman, with swelled limbs, which rendered her very slow in walking, and often gave her great distress. Not a word was dropped from which we could conjecture the cause of this change, nor of the fate of the old Superior. I took the first opportunity to enquire of one of the nuns, whom I dared to talk to, what had become of her; but I found them as ignorant as myself, though suspicious that she had been ordered by order of the Bishop. Never did I obtain any light on her mysterious disappearance. I am confident, however, that if the Bishop wished to get rid of her privately, and by foul means, he had ample opportunities and power at his command. The Ray, as usual, could not allow such an occur-

ence to pass by without intimating her own suspicions more plainly than any other of the nuns would have dared to do. She spoke out one day in the community-room, and said, "I'm going to have a hunt in the cellar for my old Superior."

"Hush, Jane Ray!" exclaimed some of the nuns, "you'll be punished."

"My mother used to tell me," replied Jane, "never to be afraid of the face of man."

It cannot be thought strange that we were superstitious. Some were more easily terrified than others by unaccountable sights and sounds; but all of us believed in the power and occasional appearance of spirits, and were ready to look for them at almost any time. I have seen several instances of alarm caused by such superstition, and have experienced it myself more than once. I was one day sitting mending aprons, beside one of the old nuns, in the community-room, while the litanies were repeating: as I was very easy to laugh, Saint Ignace or Agnes, came in, walked up to her with much agitation, and began to whisper in her ear. She usually talked but little, and that made me more curious to know what was the matter. I overheard her say to the old nun, in much alarm, that in the cellar from which she had just returned, she had heard the most dreadful groans that ever came from any human being. This was enough to give me uneasiness. I could not account for the appearance of an evil spirit in any part of the Convent, for I had been assured that the only one ever known there was that of the nun who had died with an unconfessed sin, and that others were kept at a distance by the holy water that was rather profusely used in different

parts of the
sounds heard
from some
of visiting
further info

I addressed
the first op
I was alway
walked off t
could obtain

It is rema
almost entire
any thing ev
nuns whom I
having been i
and night for
supposed to
anxious to lea
my entrance a
earn any thin
he was in the
he was the d
point aux Tr
other speak
ame of her fa
as thought to
ve taken the
with the Sai
scribe her in
servations pr
I had heard b
at one of the
ring the last
the Superior.

parts of the nunnery. Still, I presumed that the sounds heard by Saint Ignace must have proceeded from some devil, and I felt great dread at the thought of visiting the cellar again. I determined to seek further information of the terrified nun, but when I addressed her on the subject, at recreation-time, the first opportunity I could find, she replied, that I was always trying to make her break silence, and walked off to another group in the room, so that I could obtain no satisfaction.

It is remarkable that in our nunnery, we were almost entirely cut off from the means of knowing any thing even of each other. There were many nuns whom I know nothing of to this day, after having been in the same rooms with them every day and night for four years. There was a nun, whom I supposed to be in the Convent, and whom I was anxious to learn something about from the time of my entrance as a novice; but I never was able to learn any thing concerning her, not even whether she was in the nunnery or not, whether alive or dead. She was the daughter of a rich family, residing at Point aux Trembles, of whom I had heard my mother speak before I entered the Convent. The name of her family I think was Lafayette, and she was thought to be from Europe. She was known to have taken the Black Veil, but as I was not acquainted with the Saint she had assumed, and I could not describe her in "the world," all my enquiries and observations proved entirely in vain.

I had heard before my entrance into the Convent, that one of the nuns had made her escape from it during the last war, and once inquired about her of the Superior. She admitted that such was the

fact ; but I was never able to learn any particulars concerning her name, origin, or manner of escape.

CHAPTER XVII.

Disappearance of Nuns—St. Pierre—Gags—My temporary Confinement in a Cell—The Cholera Season—How to avoid it—Occupations in the Convent during the Pestilence—Manufacture of Wax Candles—The Election Riots—Alarm among the Nuns—Preparations for Defence—Penances.

I am unable to say how many nuns disappeared while I was in the Convent. There were several. One was a young lady called St. Pierre, I think, but am not certain of her name. There were two nuns by this name. I had known her as a novice with me. She had been a novice about two years and a half before I became one. She was rather large without being tall, and had rather dark hair and eyes. She disappeared unaccountably, and nothing was said of her except what I heard in whispers from a few of the nuns, as we found moments when we could speak unobserved.

Some told me they thought she must have left the Convent ; and I might have supposed so, had I not some time afterwards found some of her things lying about, which she would, in such a case, doubtless have taken with her. I had never known any thing more of her than what I could observe or conjecture. I had always, however, the idea that her parents or friends were wealthy, for she sometimes received clothes and other things which were very rich.

Another nun named St. Paul, died suddenly, but as in other cases, we knew so little, or rather were entirely ignorant of the cause and circumstances

that we could not speak freely a little about the veiled nuns my residence with them all, but five, and I think cases was, the usual when and never was such occasion we thought, that some of the Convent, room for new that the disappearance of another in the same time. I was with one of her, somebody else. It is unpleasant for herself ; but there is no hope to be had by others, and show a pleasure in no hope to be had seen the girl supplied with a human ; but it is a feel. They are compulsory measures. These were some, in a draught of about a stock of about a deposit. Some

that we could only conjecture ; and being forbidden to speak freely upon that or any other subject, thought little about it. I have mentioned that a number of veiled nuns thus mysteriously disappeared during my residence among them. I cannot perhaps recall them all, but I am confident there were as many as five, and I think more. All that we knew in such cases was, that one of our number who appeared as usual when last observed, was no where to be seen, and never was again.—Mad Jane Ray, on several such occasions, would indulge in her bold, and, as we thought, dangerous remarks. She had intimated that some of those, who had been for some time in the Convent, were by some means removed to make room for new ones : and it was generally the fact, that the disappearance of one and the introduction of another into our community, were nearly at the same time. I have repeatedly heard Jane Ray say, with one of her significant looks, "When you appear, somebody else disappears !"

It is unpleasant enough to distress or torture one's self ; but there is sometimes worse in being tormented by others, especially where they resort to force, and show a pleasure in compelling you, and leave you no hope to escape, or opportunity to resist. I had seen the gags repeatedly in use, and sometimes applied with a roughness which seemed rather inhuman ; but it is one thing to see and another thing to feel. They were ready to recommend a resort to compulsory measures, and ever ready to run for the gags. These were kept in one of the community-rooms, in a drawer between two closets ; and there a stock of about fifty of them were always kept in deposit. Sometimes a number of nuns would prove

refractory at a time: and I have seen battles commenced in which several appeared on both sides. The disobedient were, however, soon overpowered: and to prevent their screams from being heard beyond the walls, gagging commenced immediately. I have seen half a dozen lying gagged and bound at once.

I have been subjected to the same state of involuntary silence more than once; for sometimes I became excited to a state of desperation by the measures used against me, and then conducted myself in a manner perhaps not less violent than some others. My hands have been tied behind me, and a gag put into my mouth, sometimes with such force and rudeness as to separate my lips, and cause the blood to flow freely.

Treatment of this kind is apt to teach submission; and many times I have acquiesced under orders received, or wishes expressed, with a fear of a recurrence to some severe measures.

One day I had incurred the anger of the Superior in a greater degree than usual, and it was ordered that I should be taken to one of the cells. I was taken by some of the nuns, bound and gagged, carried down the stairs into the cellar, and laid upon the floor. Not long afterwards I induced one of the nuns to request the Superior to come down and see me: and on making some acknowledgment, I was released. I will, however, relate this story rather more in detail.

On that day I had been engaged with Jane Ray, in carrying into effect a plan of revenge upon another person, when I fell under the vindictive spirit of some of the old nuns, and suffered severely. The

Superior of
lence comm
scribe, nor
Suffice it t
strength, b
veral nuns,
a leathern
round my h
tened. Th
the flesh of
of which sti
my mouth, r
was, but rou
by main forc
cross it almos
to the last of
hand. The
with violence
diately closed
ground was u
beaten even.
had fallen, as
move, confine
ertions; and
state of desper
further attempt
there being
glimmer of lig
window for ab
How long I
y conjecture.
must have been
expecting to d
which I cannot

Superior ordered me to the cells, and a scene of violence commenced which I will not attempt to describe, nor the precise circumstances which led to it. Suffice it to say, that after I had exhausted all my strength, by resisting as long as I could, against several nuns, I had my hands drawn behind my back, a leathern band passed first round my thumbs, then round my hands, and then round my waist and fastened. This was drawn so tight that it cut through the flesh of my thumbs, making wounds, the scars of which still remain. A gag was then forced into my mouth, not indeed so violently as it sometimes was, but roughly enough? after which I was taken by main force, and carried down into the cellar, across it almost to the opposite extremity and brought to the last of the second range of cells on the left hand. The door was opened, and I was thrown in with violence, and left alone, the door being immediately closed, and bolted on the outside. The bare ground was under me, cold and hard as if it had been beaten even. I lay still in the position in which I had fallen, as it would have been difficult for me to move, confined as I was, and exhausted by my exertions; and the shock of my fall, and my wretched state of desperation and fear disinclined me from any further attempt. I was in almost total darkness, there being nothing perceptible except a slight glimmer of light which came in through the little window for above me.

How long I remained in that condition I can only conjecture. It seemed to me a long time, and must have been two or three hours. I did not move, expecting to die there, and in a state of distress which I cannot describe, from the tight bondage

about my hands, and the gag holding my jaws apart at their greatest extension. I am confident I must have died before morning, if, as I then expected, I had been left there all night. By-and-bye, however, the bolt was drawn, the door opened, and Jane Ray spoke to me in a tone of kindness.

She had taken an opportunity to slip into the cellar unnoticed, on purpose to see me. She unbound the gag, took it out of my mouth, and told me she would do any thing to get me out of that dungeon. If she had had the bringing of me down she would not have thrust me in so brutally, and she would be resented on those who had. She offered to throw herself upon her knees before the Superior, and beg her forgiveness. To this I would not consent; but told her to ask the Superior to come to me, as I wished to speak to her. This I had no idea she would condescend to do; but Jane had not been gone long before the Superior came, and asked if I repented in the sight of God for what I had done. I replied in the affirmative; and after a lecture of some length on the pain I had given the Virgin Mary by my conduct, she asked whether I was willing to ask pardon of all the nuns for the scandal I had caused them by my behaviour. To this I made no objection; and I was then released from my prison and my bonds, went up to the community-room, and kneeling before all the sisters in succession, begged the forgiveness and prayers of each.

Among the marks which I still bear of the wounds received from penances and violence, are the scars left by the belt with which I repeatedly tortured myself, for the mortification of my spirit. These are most distinct on my side; for although the

band, which extended round my iron points most again, then the w any where e

My thumb tight drawing and scars are

The rough wounded my in that operation teeth, and cat sometimes cry screams made and some of the

A gag was had a large spl under lip, about half an i times wounded worse than ever from the left when the gag was left an inequ irvable.

One of the events that occurred to me by Jane when I heard 34. The ceremony of that day, the morning,

band, which was four to five inches in breadth, and extended round the waist, was stuck full of sharp iron points in all parts, it was sometimes crowded most against my side, by resting in my chair, and then the wounds were usually deeper there than any where else.

My thumbs were several times cut severely by the tight drawing of the band used to confine my arms; and scars are still visible upon them.

The rough gagging which I several times endured wounded my lips very much; for it was common, in that operation, to thrust the gag hard against the teeth, and catch one or both the lips, which were sometimes cruelly cut. The object was to stop the screams made by the offender, as soon as possible; and some of the old nuns delighted in tormenting us. A gag was once forced into my mouth, which had a large splinter upon it; and this cut through my under lip, in front, leaving to this day a scar about half an inch long. The same lip was several times wounded as well as the other; but one day worse than ever, when a narrow piece was cut off from the left side of it, by being pinched between the gag and the under fore-teeth; and this has left an inequality in it which is still very observable.

One of the most shocking stories I heard of events that occurred in the nunnery before my acquaintance with it, was the following, which was told me by Jane Ray. What is uncommon, I can tell when I heard it. It was on New Year's Day, 1784. The ceremonies, customary in the early part of that day, had been performed; after mass, in the morning, the Superior had shaken hands

with all the nuns, and given us her blessing, for she was said to have received power from heaven to do so once a year, and then on the first day of the year. Besides this, cakes, raisins, &c., are distributed to the nuns on that day.

While in the community-room, I had taken a seat just within the cupboard door, where I often found a partial shelter from observation with Jane, when a conversation incidentally began between us. Our practice often was, to take places there beside one of the old nuns, awaiting the time when she would go away for a little while, and leave us partially screened from the observation of others. On that occasion, Jane and I were left for a time alone; when, after some discourse on suicide, she remarked that three nuns once killed themselves in the Convent. This happened, she said, not long after her reception, and I knew, therefore, that it was several years before, for she had been received a considerable time before I became a novice. Three young ladies, she informed me, took the veil together, or very near the same time, I am not certain which. I know they have four robes in the Convent, to be worn during the ceremony of taking the veil: but I never have seen more than one of them used at a time.

Two of the new nuns were sisters, and the other their cousin. They had been received but a few days, when information was given one morning that they had been found dead in their beds, and a profusion of blood. Jane Ray said she saw the corpses, and that they appeared to have killed themselves, by opening veins in their arms with a knife they had obtained, and all had bled together.

What was heard no one expected that St. Hypolite found them nuns had given beds.

For some made public prohibited in full interred with ceremoniously whole I have seen

There were which we knew world; and even out of the city his kind. Two killed in Montreal. The seasons of its nation. Indeed labour at those during my stay that the burning section from the person continued would intercede and the alarm Montreal, than convent, for each it in use was light. Thus a burning, which

What was extraordinary, Jane Ray added, that she heard no noise, and she believed nobody had suspected that any thing was wrong during the night. St. Hypolite, however, had stated, that she had found them in the morning, after the other nuns had gone to prayers, lying lifeless in their beds.

For some reason or other, their death was not made public; but their bodies, instead of being exhibited in full dress, in the chapel, and afterwards interred with solemnity beneath it, were taken unceremoniously into the cellar, and thrown into the hole I have so often mentioned.

There were a few instances, and only a few, in which we knew anything that was happening in the world; and even then our knowledge did not extend out of the city. I can recall but three occasions of this kind. Two of them were when the cholera prevailed in Montreal: and the other was the election riots. The appearance of the cholera, in both seasons of its ravages, gave us abundance of occupation. Indeed, we were more borne down by hard labour at those times, than ever before or afterwards during my stay. The Pope had given early notice that the burning of wax candles could afford protection from the disease, because, so long as any person continued to burn one, the Virgin Mary would intercede for him. No sooner, therefore, had the alarming disease made its appearance in Montreal, than a long wax candle was lighted in the convent, for each of the inmates, so that all parts of it in use were artificially illuminated day and night. Thus a great many candles were constantly burning, which were to be replaced from those

manufactured by the nuns. But this was a trifle. The Pope's message having been promulgated in the Grey Nunnery, and to Catholics at large through the pulpits, an extraordinary demand was created for wax candles, to supply which we were principally depended upon. All who could be employed in making them were therefore set to work, and I, among the rest, assisted in different departments, and witnessed all.

Numbers of the nuns had been long familiar with the business; for a very considerable amount of wax had been annually manufactured in the Convent; but now the works were much extended, and other occupations in a great degree laid aside. Large quantities of wax were received into the building, which was said to have been imported from England: kettles were placed in some of the working-rooms, in which it was clarified by heat over coal fires, and when prepared, the process of dipping commenced. The wicks, which were quite long, were placed, hanging upon a reel, taken up and dipped in succession, until after many slow revolutions of the reel, the candles were of the proper size. They were then taken to a part of the room where tables were prepared for rolling them smooth. This is done by passing a roller over them, until they became even and polished; after which they are laid by for sale. These processes caused a constant bustle in some of the rooms: and the melancholy reports from without, of the ravages of the cholera, with the uncertainty of what might be the result with us, notwithstanding the promised intercession of the Virgin, and brilliant lights constantly burning in such numbers around

us, impressed deeply on us the strict truth and security conferred by yet sometimes these thoughts, and evils.

It was during this acquaintance some frequent visits to the Convent. I knew them, except articles they had in their countenance to judge of the rules and the rules of the Convent, I therefore when a thousand opportunity to see they could see candles were supplied with wax candles with these instruments of illumination frequently received small quantities of wax was far We were convinced of the Virgin safe from cholera not one Convent, during so fatal

us, impressed the scenes I used to witness very deeply on my mind. I had very little doubt of the strict truth of the story we have heard of the security conferred upon those who burnt candles, and yet sometimes serious fears arose in my mind. These thoughts I did my utmost to regard as great sins, and evidences of my want of faith.

It was during that period that I formed a partial acquaintance with several Grey Nuns, who used to come frequently for supplies of candles for their Convent. I had no opportunity to converse with them, except so far as the purchase and sale of the articles they required. I became familiar with their countenances and appearances, but was unable to judge of their characters or feelings. Concerning the rules and habits prevailing in the Grey Nunnery, I therefore remained as ignorant as if I had been a thousand miles off: and they had no better opportunity to learn any thing of us, beyond what they could see around them in the room where the candles were sold.

We supplied the Congregational Nunnery also with wax candles, as I before remarked; and in with these institutions, it was understood, a constant illumination was kept up. Citizens were almost frequently running in to buy candles in great and small quantities, so that the business of store-keeping was far more laborious than common.

We were confirmed in our faith in the intercession of the Virgin, when we found that we remained safe from cholera; and it is a remarkable fact, that not one case of that disease existed in the nunnery, during either of the seasons in which it proved so fatal in the city.

When the election riots prevailed at Montreal, the city was thrown into general alarm; we heard some reports from day to day, which made us anxious for ourselves. Nothing, however, gave me any serious thoughts, until I saw uncommon movements in some parts of the Nunnery, and ascertained, to my own satisfaction, that there was a large quantity of gunpowder stored in some secret place within the walls, and that some of it was removed, or prepared for use, under the direction of the Superior.

Penances.—I have mentioned several penances in different parts of this narration, which we sometimes had to perform. There are a great variety of them; and, while some, though trifling in appearance became very painful, by long endurance or frequent repetition, others are severe in their nature, and never would be submitted to, unless, through fear of something worse, or a real belief in their efficacy to remove guilt. I will mention here such as I recollect, which can be named without offending a virtuous ear: for some there were, which although I have been compelled to submit to, either by a misled conscience, or the fear of severe punishment, now that I am better able to judge of my duties, and at liberty to act, I would not mention or describe.

Kissing the floor is a very common penance; kneeling and kissing the feet of the other nuns; another; as are kneeling on hard peas, and walking with them in the shoes. We had repeatedly to walk on our knees through the subterranean passages leading to the Congregational Nunnery; and sometimes to eat our meals with a rope round our necks.

Sometimes
most dislike
count, beca
Eels were
we felt an u
account of r
arcases in t
uncommon t
water in whi
sometimes v
with a hot iron
whip our n
re a private
rt, with the
any of the n
One of the p
we with our
mour on the
ad to the Cr
sists of a va
of many pr
we had to
falling befo
a time com
umstance re
place of his
ged to sleep
g over us bu
a piece of
presence of t
e had someti
of sharp met
upper part of
penetrated t

Sometimes we were fed only with such things as we most disliked. Garlic was given to me on this account, because I had a strong antipathy against it.

Eels were repeatedly given some of us, because we felt an unconquerable repugnance to them, on account of reports we heard of their feeding on dead carcasses in the river of St. Lawrence. It was no uncommon thing for us to be required to drink the water in which the Superior had washed her feet. Sometimes we were required to brand ourselves with a hot iron, so as to leave scars; at other times, whip our naked flesh with several small rods, before a private altar, until we drew blood. I can assert, with the perfect knowledge of the fact, that many of the nuns bear the scars of these wounds.

One of the penances was to stand for a length of time with our arms extended, in imitation of the Saviour on the Cross. The *Chemin de la croix*, or road to the Cross, is, in fact, a penance, though it consists of a variety of prostrations, with the repetition of many prayers, occupying two or three hours. As we had to perform frequently going in chapel, falling before each chapelle in succession, at a time commemorating some particular act or circumstance reported of the Saviour's progress to the place of his crucifixion. Sometimes we were obliged to sleep on the floor in the winter, with nothing over us but a single sheet; and sometimes to lay a piece of window glass to a fine powder, in the presence of the Superior.

We had sometimes to wear a leathern belt stuck with sharp metallic points, round our waists and upper part of our arms, bound on so tight that it penetrated the flesh, and drew blood.

Some of the penances were so severe, that they seemed too much to be endured; and when they were imposed, the nuns who were to suffer them showed the most violent repugnance. They would often resist, and still oftener express their opposition by exclamations and screams.

Never, however, was any noise heard from them for a long time, for there was a remedy always ready to be applied in cases of the kind. The gag which was put into the mouth of the unfortunate Saint Frances, had been brought from a place where there were forty or fifty others of different shapes and sizes. These I have seen in their depository, which is a drawer between two closets, in one of the community-rooms. Whenever any loud noise was made, one of these instruments was demanded, and gagging commenced at once. I have known many instances, and sometimes five or six nuns gagged at once. Sometimes, they would become so much excited before they could be bound and gagged, that considerable force was necessary to be exerted; and I have seen the blood flowing from mouths into which the gag had been thrust with violence.

Indeed I ought to know something of this department of nunnery discipline; I have had it tried upon myself, and can bear witness that it is not only most humiliating and oppressive, but often extremely painful. The mouth is kept forced open, and the straining of the jaws at their utmost stretch, for a considerable time, is very distressing.

One of the worst punishments which I ever saw inflicted, was that with the cap; and yet some of the old nuns were permitted to inflict it at their pleasure. I have repeatedly known them to go

a cap, who
rule, some
one. The
nuns' room

They we
ther, fitted
the chin wi
mon practio
gag her bef
and resistan
for a momen
sufferings.

most shockin
as their cont
from personal
have endured
idea of the ca
one of the cap
always brough
though the fir
as hardly pu
describable sex
ly much mo
til it was re
ate pain as to
human being
is punishmen
for many d
by experie
enever I was
in, felt read
en tied and
in, I could o
out in anguis

a cap, when one of our number had transgressed a rule, sometimes though it were a very unimportant one. These caps were kept in a cupboard in the old nuns' room, whence they were brought when wanted.

They were small, made of a reddish looking leather, fitted closely to the head, and fastened under the chin with a kind of buckle. It was the common practice to tie the nun's hands behind, and gag her before the cap was put on, to prevent noise and resistance. I never saw it worn by any one for a moment, without throwing them into severe sufferings. If permitted, they would scream in the most shocking manner, and always writhed as much as their confinement would allow. I can speak from personal knowledge of this punishment, as I have endured it more than once; and yet I have no idea of the cause of the pain. I never examined one of the caps, nor saw the inside, for they are always brought and taken away quickly; but although the first sensation was that of coolness it was hardly put on my head before a violent and indescribable sensation began, like that of a blister, only much more insupportable: and this continued until it was removed. It would produce such an acute pain as to throw us into convulsions, and I think no human being could endure it for an hour. After this punishment, we felt, its effects through the system for many days. Having once known what it was by experience, I held the cap in dread, and whenever I was condemned to suffer the punishment again, felt ready to do any thing to avoid it. But when tied and gagged, with the cap on my head again, I could only sink upon the floor, and roll about in anguish until it was taken off.

This was usually done in about ten minutes, sometimes less, but the pain always continued in my head for several days. I thought that it might take away a person's reason if kept on a much longer time. If I had not been gagged, I am sure I should have uttered awful screams. I have felt the effects for a week. Sometimes fresh cabbage leaves were applied to my head to remove it. Having had no opportunity to examine my head, I cannot say more.

CHAPTER XVIII.

The punishment of the Cap—The Priests of the District of Montreal have free access to the Black Nunnery—Crimes committed and required by them—The Pope's command to commit indecent Crimes—Characters of the Old and New Superiors—The timidity of the latter—I began to be employed in the Hospitals—Some account of them—Warning given me by a sick Nun—Penance of Hanging.

THIS punishment was occasionally resorted to for very trifling offences, such as washing the hands without permission; and it was generally applied on the spot, and before the other nuns in the community-room.

I have mentioned before, that the country, so far down as Three Rivers, is furnished with priests by the Seminary of Montreal; and that these hundred and fifty men are liable to be occasionally transferred from one station to another. Numbers of them are often to be seen in the streets of Montreal, as they may find a home in the Seminary.

They are considered as having an equal right to enter the Black Nunnery whenever they please, and, then, according to our oaths, they have complete

control over
shame of w
require m
necessary
which is, t
nality to th
terms, of s
the walls
an inmate.

Secure ag
believed tha
tell of their
before the w
of their deed
have seen in
I presume, th
for shameful
Charles, St. I
ly, Bertier, S
How unexp
make! Shut
een thought
the passage to
ife in perpetr
aking us shar
nose, and con
e brutes.
These débau
ony, conceali
y. Being w
death, where
absence of th
aid for relief
remorse or

control over the nuns. To name all the works of shame of which they are guilty in that retreat, would require much time and space, neither would it be necessary to the accomplishment of my object, which is, the publication of but some of their criminality to the world, and the developement in general terms, of scenes thus far carried on in secret within the walls of that Convent where I was so long an inmate.

Secure against detection by the world, they never believed that an eye-witness would ever escape to tell of their crimes, and declare some of their names before the world ; but the time has come, and some of their deeds of darkness must come to the day. I have seen in the Nunnery, the priests from more, I presume, than a hundred country places, admitted for shameful and criminal purposes; from St. Charles, St. Denis, St. Mark's, St. Antoine, Chambly, Bertier, St. John's, &c.

How unexpected to them will be the disclosures to make! Shut up in a place from which there has been thought to be but one way of egress, and that the passage to the grave, they considered themselves safe in perpetrating crimes in our presence, and in making us share in their criminality as often as they chose, and conducted more shamelessly than even the brutes.

These debauchées would come in without ceremony, concealing their names, both by night and day. Being within the walls of that prison-house of death, where the cries and pains of the injured innocence of their victims would never reach the world for relief or redress for their wrongs, without remorse or shame, they would glory, not only

in satiating their brutal passions, but even in torturing in the most barbarous manner, the feelings of those under their power; telling us at the same time, that this mortifying the flesh was religion, and pleasing to God. The more they could torture us, or make us violate our own feelings, the more pleasure they took in their unclean revelling; and all their brutal obscenity they called meritorious before God.

We were sometimes invited to put ourselves to voluntary sufferings in a variety of ways, not for a penance, but to show our devotion to God. A priest would sometimes say to us—

“Now, which of you have love enough for Jesus Christ to stick a pin through your cheeks?”

Some of us would signify our readiness, and immediately thrust one through up to the head. Sometimes he would propose that we should repeat the operation several times on the spot! and the cheeks of a number of the nuns would be bloody.

There were other acts occasionally proposed and consented to, which I cannot name in a book. Such the Superior would sometimes command us to perform; many of them, things not only useless and unheard of, but loathsome and indecent in the highest possible degree. How they ever could have been invented, I never could conceive. Things were done worse than the entire exposure of the person, though this was occasionally required of several at once in the presence of priests.

The Superior of the Seminary would sometimes come and inform us, that she had received orders from the Pope, to request that those nuns who possessed the greatest devotion and faith, should be requested to perform some particular deeds, which

she .nam
which no
to speak.

ear, not d
am bound
that delud
would com

There w
ters of our
came obvio
to walk, bec
ing corpulen
constantly g
nery to anot
poyments.
timidity; sh
masculine, a
cruel and col
come any co
had particula
Frances.

The new
heavy and lar
sulty, and co
oversight of t
disposition, o
great fright in
some alarmed
alone in the d
art of an old
younger ones,
character, und
ter her prom
appointed me

she named or described in our presence, but of which no decent or moral person could ever endure to speak. I cannot speak what would injure any ear, not debased to the lowest possible degree. I am bound by a regard to truth, however, to confess, that deluded women were found among us, who would comply with their requests.

There was a great difference between the characters of our old and new Superiors, which soon became obvious. The former used to say she liked to walk, because it would prevent her from becoming corpulent. She was, therefore very active, and constantly going about from one part of the Nunnery to another overseeing us at our various employments. I never saw in her any appearance of timidity; she seemed, on the contrary, bold and masculine, and sometimes much more than that, cruel and cold-blooded, in scenes calculated to overcome any common person. Such a character she had particularly exhibited at the murder of St. Frances.

The new Superior, on the other hand, was so heavy and lame, that she walked with much difficulty, and consequently exercised a less vigilant oversight of the nuns. She was also of a timid disposition, or else had been overcome by some great fright in her past life; for she was apt to become alarmed in the night, and never liked to be alone in the dark. She had long performed the part of an old nun, which is that of a spy upon the younger ones, and was well known to us in that character, under the name of St. Margarite. Soon after her promotion to the station of Superior, she appointed me to sleep in her apartment, and assign-

ed me a sofa to lie upon. One night, while I was asleep, she suddenly threw herself upon me, and exclaimed in great alarm, "Oh ! mon Dieu ! mon Dieu ! qu'estque ca ?" (Oh ! my God ! my God ! what is that ?") I jumped up and looked about the room, but saw nothing, and endeavoured to convince her that there was nothing extraordinary there. But she insisted that a ghost had come and held her bed-curtain, so that she could not draw it. I examined it, and found that the curtain had been caught by a pin in the valence, which had held it back : but it was impossible to tranquilize her for some time. She insisted on my sleeping with her the rest of the night, and I stretched myself across the foot of her bed, and slept there till morning.

During the last part of my stay in the Convent, I was often employed in attending in the hospitals. There are, as I have before mentioned, several apartments devoted to the sick, and there is a physician of Montreal, who attends as physician to the Convent. It must not be supposed, however, that he knows anything concerning the private hospitals. It is a fact of great importance to be distinctly understood, and constantly borne in mind, that he is never, under any circumstances, admitted into the private hospital-rooms. Of those he sees nothing more than any stranger whatever. He is limited to the care of those patients who are admitted from the city into the public hospital, and one of the nuns' hospitals, and these he visits every day. Sick poor are received for charity by the institution, attended by some of the nuns, and often go away with the highest ideas of our charitable characters and holy lives. The physician himself

might, perh

I frequ
public hosp
with pen, in
down the pr
ferent patie
and admini
before I left
attend the p
employed in
parture. Of
the number
and in what
with perfect
witness to co
ness may app

It would be
visited the C
as a novice, t
person must r
istence of th
some one else
and I could r
there during
I have stated.

One night I
named St. Cla
located a limb
hospital. Sh
a part of the
cession of her
to pretend tha
her as speaki
repeat what I

might, perhaps, in some cases share in the delusion.

I frequently followed Dr. Nelson through the public hospital, at the direction of the Superior, with pen, ink, and paper, in my hands, and wrote down the prescriptions which he ordered for the different patients. These were afterwards prepared and administered by the attendants. About a year before I left the Convent, I was first appointed to attend the private sick-rooms, and was frequently employed in that duty up to the day of my departure. Of course I had opportunities to observe the number and classes of patients treated there; and in what I am to say on the subject, I appeal, with perfect confidence, to any true and competent witness to confirm my words, whenever such a witness may appear.

It would be in vain for any body who has merely visited the Convent from curiosity, or resided in it as a novice, to question my declarations. Such a person must necessarily be ignorant of even the existence of the private rooms, unless informed by some one else. Such rooms, however, there are, and I could relate many things which have passed there during the hours I was employed in them, as I have stated.

One night I was called to sit up with an old nun, named St. Clare, who, in going down stairs, had dislocated a limb, and lay in a sick-room adjoining the hospital. She seemed to be a little out of her head a part of the time, but appeared to be quite in possession of her reason most of the night. It was easy to pretend that she was delirious: but I considered her as speaking the truth, though I felt reluctant to repeat what I heard her say, and excused myself

from mentioning it even at confession, on the ground that the Superior thought her deranged.

What led her to some of the most remarkable parts of her conversation was, a motion I made, in the course of the night, to take the light out of her little room into the adjoining apartment, to look once more at the sick persons there. She begged me not to leave her a moment in the dark, for she could not bear it. "I have witnessed so many horrid scenes," said she, "in this Convent, that I want somebody near me constantly, and must always have a light burning in my room. I cannot tell you," she added, "what things I remember, for they would frighten you to much. What you have seen are nothing to them. Many a murder have I witnessed; many a nice young creature has been killed in this Nunnery. I advise you to be very cautious—keep every thing to yourself—there are many here ready to betray you."

What it was that induced the old nun to express so much kindness to me I could not tell, unless she was frightened at the recollection of her own crimes, and those of others, and felt grateful for the care I took of her. She had been one of the night watches, and never before showed me any particular kindness. She did not indeed go into detail concerning the transactions to which she alluded, but told me that some nuns had been murdered under great aggravations of cruelty, by being gagged, and left to starve in the cells, or having their flesh burned off their bones with red hot irons.

It was uncommon to find compunction expressed by any of the nuns. Habit renders us insensible to the sufferings of others, and careless about our own

sins. I have
it difficult to
principles a

I was once
from the cell
was poured
these had be
many of the
the head of t
quired to tak
ed in water an
upon our clot
the liquid was
and I heard so
destroy the fle
At another tim
the liquid, whi
er, and used in
wanted at fune
turned very bla
rops of some c
water, and give
a bright red.
The bottles o
ick dark-color
should say, he
I was once m
the examinatio
ng by a cor
head downwa
and with a lea
se, and then s
with her hea
face had a ve

sins. I had become so hardened myself, that I find it difficult to rid myself of many of my former false principles and views of right and wrong.

I was one day set to wash some empty bottles from the cellar, which had contained the liquid that was poured into the cemetery there. A number of these had been brought from the corner where so many of them were always to be seen, and placed at the head of the cellar stairs, and there we were required to take them and wash them out. We poured in water and rinsed them; a few drops which got upon our clothes soon made holes in them. I think the liquid was called vitriol, or some such name, and I heard some persons say that it would soon destroy the flesh and even the bones of the dead. At another time, we were furnished with a little of the liquid, which was mixed with a quantity of water, and used in dyeing some cloth black, which was wanted at funerals in the chapels. Our hands were turned very black by being dipped in it, but a few drops of some other liquid were mixed with fresh water, and given us to wash in, which left our skin a bright red.

The bottles of which I spoke were made of very thick dark-coloured glass, large at the bottom, and, I should say, held something less than a gallon.

I was once much shocked, on entering the room for the examination of conscience, at seeing a nun hanging by a cord from a ring in the ceiling, with her head downward. Her clothes had been tied round with a leathern strap, to keep them in their place, and then she had been fastened in that situation, with her head some distance from the floor. Her face had a very unpleasant appearance, being

dark coloured, and swollen by the rushing in of the blood; her hands were tied, and her mouth stopped with a large gag. This nun proved to be no other than Jane Ray, who for some fault had been condemned to this punishment.

This was not, however, a solitary case; I heard of numbers who were "hung," as it was called, at different times; and I saw St. Hypolite and St. Luke undergoing it. This was considered a most distressing punishment; and it was the only one which Jane Ray could not endure, of all she had tried.

Some of the nuns would allude to it in her presence, but it usually made her angry. It was probably practised in the same place while I was a novice, but I never heard or thought of such a thing in those days. Whenever we wished to enter the room for the examination of conscience, we had to ask leave, and, after some delay, were permitted to go, but always under a strict charge to bend the head forward, and keep the eyes fixed upon the floor.

CHAPTER XIX.

More visits to the imprisoned Nuns—Their Fears—Others temporarily put into the cells—Relics—The Agnus Dei—The Priests' private Hospital, or Holy Retreat—Secret rooms in the Eastern Wing—Reports of Murders in the Convent—The Superior's private Records—Numbers of Nuns in the Convent—Desire of Escape—Urgent reasons for it—Plan—Deliberation—Attempt—Success.

I ~~often~~ seized an opportunity, when I safely could, to speak a cheering or friendly word to one of the poor prisoners, in passing their cells, on my errand in the cellars. For a time I supposed them to be

sisters; but I was not the case. The fear of the should be f...
 sioned to at...
 not somebo...
 I could ea...
 others, that f...
 Confined in...
 long arched c...
 visited only r...
 whom they w...
 with only the...
 gloomy thus t...
 even years, wi...
 ble at any m...
 bishop or Super...
 or creatures...
 errors perpetr...
 and could not b...
 ular, which w...
 which it was...
 confidence, she...
 must also have...
 they ever did...
 need through...
 be subject to...
 dreadful; bu...
 years.
 often felt muc...
 see them relea...
 the doctrine pe...
 our future h...
 sufferings we

sisters; but I afterwards discovered that this was not the case. I found that they were always under the fear of suffering some punishment, in case they should be found talking with a person not commissioned to attend them. They would often ask, "Is not somebody coming?"

I could easily believe what I heard affirmed by others, that fear was the severest of their sufferings. Confined in the dark, in so gloomy a place, with the long arched cellar stretching off this way and that, visited only now and then by a solitary nun, with whom they were afraid to speak their feelings, and with only the miserable society of each other; how gloomy thus to spend day after day, months, and even years, without any prospect of liberation, and liable at any moment to another fate to which, the Bishop or Superior might condemn them! But these poor creatures must have known something of the horrors perpetrated in other parts of the building, and could not have been ignorant of the hole in the cellar, which was not far from the cells, and the use to which it was devoted. One of them told me, in confidence, she wished they could get out. They must also have been often disturbed in their sleep, they ever did sleep, by the numerous priests who passed through the trap-door at no great distance. To be subject to such trials for a single day would be dreadful; but these nuns had them to endure years.

I often felt much compassion for them, and wished to see them released; but at other times yielding to the doctrine perpetually taught us in the Convent, that our future happiness would be proportioned to our sufferings we had to undergo in this world, I

would rest satisfied that their imprisonment was a real blessing to them.

Others, I presume, participated with me in such feelings. One Sunday afternoon, after we had performed all our ceremonies, and were engaged as usual, at that time, with backgammon and other amusements, one of the young nuns exclaimed, "Oh! how headstrong are those wretches in the cells, they are as bad as the day they were first put in!"

This exclamation was made, as I supposed, in consequence of some recent conversation with them, as I knew her to be particularly acquainted with the older one.

Some of the vacant cells were occasionally used for temporary imprisonment. Three nuns were confined in them, to my knowledge, for disobedience to the Superior, as she called it. They did not join the rest in singing in the evening, being exhausted in the various exertions of the day. The Superior ordered them to sing: and, as they did not comply after the command had been twice repeated, she ordered them away to the cells.

They were immediately taken down into the cellar, placed in separate dungeons, and the door shut and barred upon them. There they remained through that night, the following day and second night, but were released in time to attend mass the second morning.

The Superior used occasionally to show something in a glass box, which we were required to regard with the highest degree of reverence. It was made of wax, and called an *Agnus Dei*. She used to exhibit it to us when we were in a state of grace:

is, after con-
it had been
Saviour ha-
Every time
were told it
gatory to ou-
next of kin in
had no such
souls in purg-
Jane Ray v
it—some of c
I have be-
dainties of diff
I have mentio
ing-room, in
made their "I
was allowed to
with a waiter
little stand ne-
then retire to a
thing was to b-
stand by the S
e, and closed
The Bishop
d worse for wi
partaking of re-
all the nuns
cessing, and
oulder of each
angular and fo
There are th
which I never ex-
d had seen, a
g, when one d

is, after confession and before sacrament. She said it had been blessed in the very dish in which our Saviour had eaten. It was brought from Rome. Every time we kissed it, or even looked at it, we were told it gave a hundred day's release from purgatory to ourselves, or if we did not need it, to our next of kin in purgatory, if not a Protestant. If we had no such kinsman, the benefit was to go to the souls in purgatory not prayed for.

Jane Ray would sometimes say to me, "Let's kiss it—some of our friends will thank us for it."

I have been repeatedly employed in carrying dainties of different kinds into the little private room I have mentioned, next beyond the Superior's sitting-room, in the second story, which the priests made their "*Holy Retreat*." That room I never was allowed to enter. I could only go to the door with a waiter of refreshments, set it down upon a little stand near it, give three raps on the door, and then retire to a distance to await orders. When anything was to be taken away, it was placed on the stand by the Superior, who then gave three raps for me, and closed the door.

The Bishop I saw at least once, when he appeared worse for wine, or something of the kind. After partaking of refreshments in the Convent, he sent for all the nuns, and on our appearance, gave us his blessing, and put a piece of pound cake on the shoulder of each of us, in a manner which appeared singular and foolish.

There are three rooms in the Black Nunnery, which I never entered. I had enjoyed much liberty, and had seen, as I supposed, all parts of the building, when one day I observed an old nun go to a

corner of an apartment near the northern end of the western wing, push the end of her scissors into a crack in the panelled wall, and pull out a door. I was much surprised, because I never had conjectured that any door was there; and it appeared, when I afterwards examined the place, that no indication of it could be discovered on the closest scrutiny. I stepped forward to see what was within, and saw three rooms opening into each other: but the nun refused to admit me within the door, which she said led to rooms kept as depositories.

She herself entered and closed the door, so that I could not satisfy my curiosity; and no occasion presented itself. I always had a strong desire to know the use of these apartments; for I am sure they must have been designed for some purpose of which I was intentionally kept ignorant, otherwise they never would have remained unknown to me so long. Besides, the old nun evidently had some strong reason for denying me admission, though she endeavoured to quiet my curiosity.

The Superior, after my admission into the Convent, had told me I had access to every room in the building; and I had seen places which bore witness to the cruelties and the crimes committed under her commands or sanction; but here was a succession of rooms which had been concealed from me, and so constructed as if designed to be unknown to all but a few. I am sure that any person, who might be able to examine the wall in that place, would pronounce that secret door a surprising piece of work. I never saw anything of the kind which appeared to me so ingenious and skilfully made. I told Jane Ray what I had seen, and she said at once

"We will go
pose she nev

I naturally
whether such
of St. Fran
an opportuni
was—

"Oh yes:
you were a nov

This was all
though I was

they were kille
I had seen pra

I went into
something, and

into a book with
of her what it v

ver, and laid it
there are two b

ght as you ent
near the window

the lecture-book
ter seemed to

oks. I have o
while I have been

observed lo
ough I never lo

We were und
them, and the

present with
some time after

into the Super
and as the sam

said, "Come le

"We will get in and see what is there." But I suppose she never found an opportunity.

I naturally felt a good deal of curiosity to learn whether such scenes, as I had witnessed in the death of St. Frances, were common or rare, and took an opportunity to enquire of Jane Ray. Her reply was—

"Oh yes: and there were many murdered while you were a novice, whom you heard nothing about."

This was all I ever learnt on this subject; but although I was told nothing of the manner in which they were killed, I suppose it to be the same which I had seen practised, namely, by smothering.

I went into the Superior's parlour one day for something, and found Jane Ray there alone, looking into a book with an appearance of interest. I asked her what it was, but she made some trifling answer, and laid it by as if unwilling to let me take it. There are two bookcases in the room; one on the right as you enter the door, and the other opposite, near the window and the sofa. The former contains the lecture-books and other printed volumes, the latter seemed to be filled with note and account books. I have often seen the keys in the bookcases while I have been dusting the furniture, and sometimes observed letters stuck up in the room; although I never looked into one, or thought of doing so.

We were under strict orders not to touch any of them, and the idea of sins and penances was always present with me.

Some time after the occasion mentioned, I was, taken into the Superior's room with Jane, to arrange and as the same book was lying out of the case, said, "Come let us look into it." I immediately

consented, and we opened it, and turned over several leaves. It was about a foot and a half long, as nearly as I can remember, a foot wide, and about two inches thick, though I cannot speak with particular precision, as Jane frightened me almost as soon as I touched it, by exclaiming, "There, you have looked into it, and if you tell of me, I will of you."

The thought of being subjected to a severe penance, which I had reason to apprehend, fluttered me very much: and, although I tried to cover my fears, I did not succeed very well. I reflected, however, that the sin was already committed, and that it would not be increased if I examined the book.

I therefore looked a little at several pages, though I still felt a good deal of agitation. I saw at once that the volume was a record of the entrance of nuns and novices into the Convent, and of the births that had taken place in the Convent. Entries of the last description were made in a brief manner, on the following plan: I do not give the names or dates as real, but only to show the form of entering them,

Saint Mary,	delivered of a son,	March 16, 1834
Saint Clarice	„ daughter,	April 2.
Saint Matilda	„ daughter,	April, 30, &c.

No mention was made in the book of the death of the children, though I well knew not one of them could be living at that time.

Now I presume that the period the book embraced was about two years, as several names near the beginning I knew: but I can form only a rough conjecture of the number of infants born, and

dered, of c
suppose th
pages, and
each page
eral pages
this supposi
ber, which I
there in the

What were
longing to th
ed into, I ha
one of them
was well acqu
her intelligen
ould be brou
doubtless unf
nown.

I am able,
which appeared
the exact num
ay of the weel
point of some i
rred since my
d been openly
I was appoint
at the covers f
cluding the nu
ave said befor
ound the knive
ing. These v
amounted to
ber of novice
there must h
dred and eigh

dered, of course, records of which it contained. I suppose the book contained at least one hundred pages, and one fourth were written upon, and that each page contained fifteen distinct records. Several pages were devoted to the list of births. On this supposition there must have been a large number, which I can easily believe to have been born there in the course of two years.

What were the contents of the other books belonging to the same case with that which I looked into, I have no idea, having never dared to touch one of them; I believe, however, that Jane Ray was well acquainted with them, knowing, as I do, her intelligence and prying disposition. If she could be brought to give her testimony, she would doubtless unfold many curious particulars now unknown.

I am able, in consequence of a circumstance which appeared accidental, to state with confidence the exact number of persons in the Convent one day of the week in which I left it. This may be a point of some interest, as several deaths have occurred since my taking the veil, and many burials had been openly made in the chapel.

I was appointed, at the time mentioned, to lay out the covers for all the inmates of the Convent, including the nuns in the cells. These covers, as I have said before, were linen bands, to be bound round the knives, forks, spoons, and napkins, for dining. These were for all the nuns and novices, and amounted to two hundred and ten. As the number of novices was then about thirty, I know that there must have been at that time about one hundred and eighty veiled nuns.

I was occasionally troubled with a desire of escaping from the Nunnery, and was much distressed whenever I felt so evil an imagination rise in my mind. I believed that it was a sin, a great sin, and did not fail to confess, at every opportunity, that I felt discontent. My confessors informed me that I was beset with evil spirits, and urged me to pray against it. Still, however, every now and then, I would think, "Oh, if I could get out."

At length one of the priests to whom I had confessed this sin, informed me, for my comfort, that he had begun to pray to Saint Anthony, and hoped his intercession would, by-and-by, drive away the evil spirit. My desire of escape was partly excited by the fear of bringing an infant to the murderous hands of my companions, or of taking a potion whose violent effects I too well knew.

One evening, however, I found myself more filled with a desire of escape than ever: and whatever exertions I made to dismiss the thought proved entirely unavailing. During evening prayers, I became quite occupied with it; and when the time of meditation arrived, instead of falling into a doze, as I often did, though I was a good deal fatigued, I found no difficulty in keeping awake. When this exercise was over, and the other nuns were about to retire to the sleeping room, my station being in the private sick-room for the night, I withdrew to my post, which was the little sitting-room adjoining it.

Here, then, I threw myself upon the sofa, and being alone, reflected a few moments on the manner of escaping which had occurred to me. The physician had arrived a little before, at half-past eight

and I had
to bed, w
prescripti
was to see

What I
collect, as
my custom
ders, in thi

1

1

I rememb
ing, and the
ed for a few

There were
those rooms
sage adjoining
a door, into
wicker gate:

can usually
with a key for

It would ha

pass out that

ally in the year

in a small hut

ervation wou

herefore, was

rough the ot

rough the sid

small room usu

er passage s

ard, and a larg

had no liberty

new that sever

all I determin

and I had now to accompany him as usual from bed to bed, with pen, ink, and paper, to write down his prescriptions for the direction of the old nun, who was to see them administered.

What I wrote on that evening, I cannot now recollect, as my mind was uncommonly agitated; but my customary way was to note down briefly his orders, in this manner—

1 d. salts, St. Matilde,

1 blister, St. Genevieve, &c.

I remember that I wrote three orders that evening, and then, having finished the rounds, I returned for a few moments to the sitting-room.

There were two ways of access to the street from those rooms; first, the more direct, from the passage adjoining the sick-room down stairs, through a door, into the Nunnery-yard, and through a wicker gate: that is the way by which the physician usually enters at night, and he is provided with a key for that purpose.

It would have been unsafe, however, for me to pass out that way, because a man is kept continually in the yard, near the gate, who sleeps at night in a small hut near the door, to escape whose observation would be impossible. My only hope, therefore, was that I might gain my passage through the other way, to do which I must pass through the sick-room, then through a passage, or small room usually occupied by an old nun; another passage and staircase leading down to the yard, and a large gate opening into the cross street. I had no liberty to go beyond the sick-room, and knew that several of the doors might be fastened; so I determined to try; although I have often

since been astonished at my boldness in undertaking what would expose me to so many hazards of failure, and to severe punishment if found out.

It seemed as if I acted under some extraordinary impulse, which encouraged me to what I should hardly at any other moment have thought of undertaking. I had sat but a short time upon the sofa, however, before I rose with a desperate determination to make the experiment. I therefore walked hastily across the sick room, passed into the nun's room, walked by in a great hurry, and almost without giving her time to speak or think, said, "A message!" and in an instant was through the door, and in the next passage. I think there was another nun with her at the moment; and it is probable that my hurried manner, and prompt intimation that I was sent on a pressing mission to the Superior, prevented them from entertaining any suspicion of my intention. Besides, I had the written orders of the physician in my hand, which may have tended to mislead them; and it was well known to some of the nuns, that I had twice left the Convent, and returned from choice, so that I was probably more likely to be trusted to remain than many of the others.

The passage which I had now reached had several doors, with all which I was acquainted; that on the opposite side opened into a community-room, where I should probably have found some of the old nuns at that hour, and they would certainly have stopped me. On the left, however, was a large door, both locked and barred: but I gave the door a sudden swing, that it might creak as little as possible, being of iron. Down the stairs I hurried

and making
stepped
at liberty

The fol
deemed n
narrative.

After m
to the alm
ness and c
known. E
institution,
a fugitive n
belonging t
sage, which

I was sitt
matron, eng
employed in
that Mr. Co
I was inform
often visite
wish to see
lieve, expres
willingness
did not go.

The woma
that I need
impossible f
self as well
taken. No
place I migh
had better co

and making my way through the door into the yard, stepped across it, unbarred the great gate, and was at liberty !

CONCLUSION.

The following circumstances comprise all that is deemed necessary now to subjoin to the preceding narrative.

After my arrival in New York, I was introduced to the alms-house, where I was attended with kindness and care, and, as I hoped, was entirely unknown. But when I had been some time in that institution, I found that it was reported that I was a fugitive nun ; and not long after, an Irish woman, belonging to the house, brought me a secret message, which caused me some agitation.

I was sitting in the room of Mrs. Johnson, the matron, engaged in sewing, when that Irish woman, employed in the institution, came in and told me that Mr. Conroy was below, and had sent to see me. I was informed that he was a Roman Priest, who often visited the house, and he had a particular wish to see me at that time ; having come, as I believe, expressly for that purpose. I showed unwillingness to comply with such an invitation, and did not go.

The woman told me, further, that he sent me word that I need not think to avoid him, for it would be impossible for me to do so. I might conceal myself as well as I could, but I should be found and taken. No matter where I went, or what hiding place I might choose, I should be known ; and I had better come at once. He knew who I was ;

and he was authorized to take me to the Sisters of Charity, if I should prefer to join them. He would promise that I might stay with them if I choose, and be permitted to remain in New York. He sent me word further that he had received full power and authority over me from the Superior of the Hotel Dieu Nunnery at Montreal, and was able to do all that she could do; as her right to dispose of me at her will had been imparted to him by a regular writing received from Canada. This was alarming information for me, in the weakness in which I was at that time. The woman added, that the authority had been given to all the priests; so that go where I might I should meet men informed about me and my escape, and fully empowered to seize me whenever they could, and convey me back to the Convent from which I had escaped.

Under these circumstances, it seemed to me that the offer to place me among the Sisters of Charity, with permission to remain in New York, was mild and favourable. However, I had resolution enough to refuse to see priest Conroy.

Not long afterwards I was informed, by the same messenger, that the priest was again in the building, and repeated his request. I desired one of the gentlemen connected with the institution, that a stop might be put to such messages, as I wished to receive no more of them. A short time after, however, the woman told me that Mr. Conroy wished to enquire of me, whether my name was not St. Eustace while a nun, and if I had not confessed to Priest Kelly in Montreal. I answered, that it was all true; for I had confessed to him a short time while in the Nunnery. I was then told again that

the priest that I would Mr. S—; I was after Roman priest sage where mercy of God that time, and have met him Mr. Conroy ask for me; terminated to Sisters of which gave me saved from the been exposed

As the priest I sometimes and then the had witnessed me very powerful duty to discontinue knowledge of without making a great sin, with impression made arguments of the duty of necessary holiness required.

The evening anticipated with alone, and begged kind. It seemed

the priest wanted to see me, and I sent back word that I would see him in the presence of Mr. T—or Mr. S—; which, however, was not agreed to; and I was afterwards informed, that Mr. Conroy, the Roman priest, spent an hour in the room and a passage where I had frequently been; but, through the mercy of God, I was employed at another place at that time, and had no occasion to go where I should have met him. I afterwards repeatedly heard, that Mr. Conroy continued to visit the house, and to ask for me; but I never saw him. I once had determined to leave the institution, and go to the Sisters of Charity; but circumstances occurred which gave me time for further reflection: and I was saved from the destruction to which I should have been exposed.

As the period of my accouchment approached, I sometimes thought that I should not survive it; and then the recollection of the dreadful crimes I had witnessed in the Nunnery would come upon me very powerfully, and I would think it a solemn duty to disclose them before I died. To have a knowledge of those things, and leave the world without making them known, appeared to me like a great sin, whenever I could divest myself of the impression made upon me by the declarations and arguments of the Superior, nuns, and priests, of the duty of submitting to every thing, and the necessary holiness of whatever they did or required.

The evening but one before the period which I anticipated with so much anxiety, I was sitting alone, and began to indulge in reflections of this kind. It seemed to me that I must be near the close

of my life, and I determined to make a disclosure at once. I spoke to Mrs. Ford, a woman whose character I respected, a nurse in the hospital, number twenty-three. I informed her that I had no expectation of living long, and had some things on my mind which I wished to communicate before it should be too late. I added, that I should prefer telling them to Mr. T——, the chaplain! of which she approved, as she considered it a duty to do so, under those circumstances. I had no opportunity, however, to converse with Mr. T. at that time, and, probably, my purpose of disclosing the facts already given in this book, would never have been executed, but for what subsequently took place.

It was alarm which led me to form such a determination; and when the period of trial had been safely passed, and I had a prospect of recovery, any thing appeared to me more unlikely than that I should make this exposure.

I was then a Roman Catholic, at least a great part of my time; and my conduct, in a great measure, was according to the faith and motives of a Roman Catholic. Notwithstanding what I knew of the conduct of so many of the priests and nuns, I thought that it had no effect on the sanctity of the Church, or the authority or effects of the acts performed by the former at the mass, confession, &c. I had such a regard for my vows as a nun, that I considered my hand as well as my heart irrevocably given to Jesus Christ, and could never have allowed any person to take it. Indeed to this day, I feel an instinctive aversion of offering my hand, or taking the hand of another person, even as an expression of friendship.

I also th
Catholics,
I had now
happily sav
nery; what
fall into the

I had, h
child, destin
had seen ba
through the
of the truth
because neve
to satisfy me
be, would be
think, were
could I trust
hastened the
hurry them i
I suppose tha
Church of M
ing up in the
risk of having
pect, especial
and the most
pent child and
Yet, my mi
the opposite di
perhaps the or
as to throw
Church, to be
ore, the fear
announced all
ance of the f
however, that

I also thought that I might soon return to the Catholics, although fear and disgust held me back. I had now that infant to think for, whose life I had happily saved by my timely escape from the Nunnery; what its fate might be, in case it should ever fall into the power of the priests, I could not tell.

I had, however, reason for alarm. Would a child, destined to destruction, like the infants I had seen baptized and smothered, be allowed to go through the world unmolested, a living memorial of the truth of crimes long practised in security, because never exposed? What pledges could I get to satisfy me, that I, on whom her dependence must be, would be spared by those who, I had reason to think, were wishing then to sacrifice me? How could I trust the helpless infant in hands which had hastened the baptism of many such, in order to hurry them into the secret pit in the cellar? Could I suppose that *Father Phelan, Priest of the Parish Church of Montreal*, would see *his own child* growing up in the world, and feel willing to run the risk of having the truth exposed? What could I expect, especially from him, but the utmost rancour, and the most determined enmity, against the innocent child and its abused and defenceless mother?

Yet, my mind would sometimes still incline in the opposite direction, and indulge the thought, that perhaps the only way to secure heaven to us both was to throw ourselves back into the hands of the Church, to be treated as she pleased.—When, therefore, the fear of immediate death was removed, I renounced all thoughts of communicating the substance of the facts of this volume. It happened, however, that my danger was not passed. I was

soon seized with very alarming symptoms; then my desire to disclose my story revived.

I had before had an opportunity to speak in private with the chaplain; but, as it was at a time when I supposed myself out of danger, I had deferred for three days my proposed communication, thinking that I might yet avoid it altogether. When my symptoms, however, became more alarming, I was anxious for Saturday to arrive, the day which I had appointed; and when I had not the opportunity, on that day, which I desired, I thought it might be too late. I did not see him till Monday when my prospects of surviving were very gloomy, and I then informed him that I wished to communicate to him a few secrets, which were likely otherwise to die with me. I then told him, that while a nun, in the Convent of Montreal, I had witnessed the murder of a nun, called Saint Frances, and of at least one of the infants which I have spoken of in this book. I added some few circumstances, and I believe disclosed, in general terms, some of the crimes I knew of in that Nunnery.

My anticipations of death proved to be unfounded; for my health afterwards improved, and had I not made the confessions on that occasion, it is very possible I never might have made them. I, however, afterwards, felt more willing to listen to instruction, and experienced friendly attentions from some of the benevolent persons around me, who, taking an interest in me on account of my darkened understanding, furnished me with the Bible, and were ever ready to counsel me when I desired it.

I soon began to believe that God might have intended that his creatures should learn his will by

reading his
ercise of the
bility to him

It is diffic
such argume
I had been c
think aright,
always effect
I feel that I
truths, in wh
thoroughly in
how it is, tha
the United S
crimes as are
dional Nunne
uns used oft
children from
ult to be cor
triumph when
rue faith."

made any seri
he text on wh
ath after my
he Scriptures

EXTRACT

RE

MARIA

The following
Vindicator.

2, the Sub
fies Maria M
ance of differ

reading his word, and taking upon them the free exercise of their reason, and acting under responsibility to him.

It is difficult for one who has never given way to such arguments and influences as those to which I had been exposed, to realize how hard it is to think aright, after thinking wrong. The Scriptures always effect me powerfully when I read them; but I feel that I have but just begun to learn the great truths, in which I ought to have been early and thoroughly instructed. I realize, in some degree, how it is, that the Scriptures render the people of the United States so strongly opposed to such doctrines as are taught in the Black and Congregational Nunneries of Montreal. The priests and monks used often to declare that of all heretics, the children from the United States were the most difficult to be converted; and it was thought a great triumph when one of them was brought over to "the true faith." The first passage of Scripture that made any serious impression upon my mind, was the text on which the chaplain preached on the Sabbath after my introduction to the house,—“Search the Scriptures.”

**EXTRACTS FROM PUBLIC JOURNALS,
RELATIVE TO THE TRUTH OF
MARIA MONK'S DISCLOSURES.**

The following certificate appeared in the Protestant Vindicator, in March, 1836.

“We, the Subscribers, have an acquaintance with Maria Monk, and having considered the evidence of different kinds which has been collected in

relation to her case, have no hesitation in declaring our belief in the truth of the Statements she makes in her book, recently published in New York, entitled 'Awful Disclosures,' &c.

"We at the same time declare that the assertion, originally made in the Roman Catholic Newspapers of Boston, that the book was copied from a work entitled 'The Gates of Hell Opened,' is wholly destitute of foundation; it being entirely new, and not copied from anything whatsoever.

"And we further declare, that no evidence has been produced which discredits the statements of Miss Monk; while, on the contrary, her story has yet received, and continues to receive, confirmation from various sources.

"During the last week, two important witnesses spontaneously appeared, and offered to give public testimony in her favour. From them the following delineations have been received. The first is an affidavit given by Mr. William Miller, now a resident of this city. The second is a statement received from a young married woman, who, with her husband, also resides here. In the clear and repeated statements made by these two witnesses, we place entire reliance; who are ready to furnish satisfaction to any persons making reasonable enquiries on the subject.

"W. C. BROWNLEE, "AMOS BELDEN, "JOHN SLOCUM, "DAVID WESSON, "ANDREW BRUCE, "THOMAS HOGAN." "D. FANSHAW.

From the American Protestant Vindicator.

"It was expected that, after Maria Monk's disclosures, an artful attempt would be made to invali-

date her testi-
her escape fr
altering the s
ing, and bric
Stone, who v
himself and t
what he saw, l
ions by the i
y force thro
ion, which v
space of a few
ller of myste
Miss Monk
were so surpr
immaculate p
disparaged, th
he subject—l
ained almost
ere led to co
at prevente
general attent
ected towards
the immediate
ver what they
he time at wh
ed the visit o
estigation ha
ev. Jas. P. M
ly for the pu
radually con
rmed Mr. M
oured that sh
rious pile o
ed been plac

in declaring
 ts she made
 w York, an-
 he assertion,
 Newspapers
 from a work
 s wholly dea-
 new, and no
 evidence has
 statements of
 er story has
 confirmation
 ant witness
 o give public
 the following
 he first is a
 , now a resi-
 tement receiv-
 ho, with her
 clear and re-
 witnesses, w
 o furnish sat-
 onable enqui-
 EN, "JOHN
 REW BRUC
 Indicator.
 Monk's discl-
 ade to inval-

late her testimony—which was done secretly after
 her escape from the Hotel Dieu Nunnery, by so
 altering the appearance of that institution by plank-
 ing, and bricking, and stoning, as to deceive Col.
 Stone, who was then requested to examine it for
 himself and the world. The Col. misrepresented
 what he saw, he was deceived regarding those altera-
 tions by the inmates, who dragged him, as it were,
 by force through the building during his examina-
 tion, which was performed in the amazing short
 space of a few hours. But time is the grand unrav-
 eller of mysteries. On the appearance of the book
 of Miss Monk, the hoodwinked people of Montreal
 were so surprised and stupified at finding that the
 immaculate purity of the Hotel Dieu had been so
 disparaged, that they *forgot* to think seriously on
 the subject—but, understanding that the story had
 gained almost general belief abroad, they, at last,
 were led to conjecture that perhaps it was partiality
 that prevented them from believing it at home.
 General attention, therefore, in Montreal, was di-
 rected towards that edifice—and those residing in
 its immediate vicinity cast a retrospective glance
 over what they had seen transacted there, between
 the time at which the 'Dislosures' were published,
 and the visit of Col. Stone. The result of this in-
 vestigation has been lately given on the spot to the
 Rev. Jas. P. Miller, of New York, who visited that
 city for the purpose of hearing that the truth was
 gradually coming to light. The neighbours in-
 formed Mr. Miller that about the time it was ru-
 moured that she had exposed the institution, a mys-
 terious pile of planks, twenty-five feet in height,
 had been placed mysteriously in the yard, which

were wonderfully and gradually used in progressing some improvements in the building—for they were neither employed outside nor hauled away.

Whatever may be the fact with regard to Maria Monk's alleged disclosures, those of our people who have read your papers, are satisfied in one point: that Mr. Stone's credibility as a witness has been successfully impeached; that his examination of the Nunnery, was a mere sham; that he was either the dupe of Jesuitical imposture, or that he himself is a fond impostor; that he has been unwillingly or ignorantly befooled; and unless he has had a tangible reward, that he has 'got his labour for his pains.'

"Whatever may be the facts in relation to those 'disclosures,' we needed not your paper to satisfy us either that Jesuits must be as holy as the 'Blessed Virgin Mother' herself, or those conventicles of unprotected females are scenes of the most damning character.—A PROTESTANT."

From the Long Island Star, of Feb. 29th.

"Since the publication of our last paper, we have received a communication from Messrs. Howe and Bates, of New York, the publishers of Miss Monk's 'Awful Disclosures.' It appears that some influence has been at work in that city, adverse to the free examination of the case between her and the priests of Canada; for thus far the newspapers have been most entirely closed against everything in her defence, whilst most of them have published false charges against the book, some of a preposterous nature, the contradiction of which is plain and palpable.

"Returning to New York, she then first resolved to publish her story, which she has recently done

after several
ified them

When it b

her intention

of the newsp

her character

history in se

to afford und

ore made by

"On the p

Catholic Diar

and other pa

and one of

should be 'ly

also circulated

alignant lib

and promising

ays. This w

with the old

tributed throu

the authority

papers denoun

"Another c

as made, by

and others viz

European wor

the publish

ard for any b

"Yet such

belief of other

hers to obtai

ark papers ge

eful in an a

"This is the

after several intelligent disinterested persons had satisfied themselves by much examination that it is true.

When it became known in Canada that this was her intention, six affidavits were published in some of the newspapers, intended to destroy confidence in her character; but these were found very contradictory in several important points, and in others to afford undesigned confirmation of statements before made by her.

"On the publication of her book, the New York Catholic Diary, the Truth-teller, the Green Banner, and other papers, made virulent attacks upon it, and one of them proposed that the publishers should be 'lynched.' An anonymous handbill was also circulated in New York, declaring the work a malignant libel, got up by Protestant clergymen, and promising an ample refutation of it in a few days. This was re-published in the Catholic Diary, with the old Montreal affidavits, which were distributed through New York and Brooklyn; and on the authority of these, several Protestant newspapers denounced the work as false and malicious.

"Another charge, quite inconsistent with the rest, was made, by the leading Roman Catholic papers and others viz., that it was a mere copy of an old European work. This had been promptly denied by the publishers with the offer of 100 dollars reward for any book at all resembling it.

"Yet such is the resolution of some, and the unbelief of others, that it is impossible for the publishers to obtain insertions for the replies in the New York papers generally, and they have been unsuccessful in an attempt at Philadelphia.

"This is the ground on which the following arti-

cle has been offered to us, for publication in the Star. It was offered to Mr. Schneller, a Roman Priest, and Editor of the Catholic Diary, for insertion in his paper of Saturday before last, but refused, although written expressly as an answer to the affidavits and charges his previous number had contained. This article has been refused insertion in a Philadelphia paper, after it had been satisfactorily ascertained that there was no hope of gaining admission for it into any of the New York papers.

"It should be stated in addition, that the authoress of the book, Maria Monk, is in New York, and stands ready to answer any questions, and submit to any enquiries put in a proper manner, and desires nothing so strongly as an opportunity to prove before a court the truth of her story. She has already found persons of respectability who have confirmed some of the facts, important and likely to be attested by concurrent evidence; and much further testimony in her favour may be soon expected.

"With these facts before them, intelligent readers will judge for themselves. She asks for investigation, while her opponents deny her every opportunity to meet the charges made against her. Mr. Schneller, after expressing a wish to see her, to the publishers, refused to meet her anywhere, unless in his own house; while Mr. Quarter, another Roman Catholic priest, called to see her, at ten o'clock on night, accompanied by another man, without giving their names, and under the false pretence of being bearers of a letter from her brother in Montreal.

THE END.

ADD

At liberty—D
night—Disa
vent—Solitu

I HAVE but a
I got through
I am confide
fastened beh
and what wa
liberty; but
was in great
for a momen
leave the con
would it not
ion, I turned
up the street
like the oppo
ame convent
an's street,
erted all my
as a cold eve
g recollected
ard for a sh
Before leavi
d of the buildi
ad not better
e, ran to the

ADDITIONAL INFORMATION.

CHAPTER I.

At liberty—Doubtful what to do—Found refuge for the night—Disappointment—My first day out of the Convent—Solitude—Recollections, fears, and plans.

I HAVE but a confused idea of the manner in which I got through some of the doors; several of them, I am confident, were fastened, and one or two I fastened behind me.* But I was now in the street, and what was to be done next? I had got my liberty; but where should I go? It was dark, I was in great danger, go which way I would; and for a moment, I thought I had been unwise to leave the convent. If I could return unobserved, would it not be better? But summoning resolution, I turned to the left, and ran some distance up the street; then reflecting that I had better take the opposite direction, I returned under the same convent walls, and ran as fast down to St. Paul's street, then turning up towards the north, exerted all my strength, and fled for my life. It was a cold evening, but I stopped for nothing, having recollected the house where I had been put to ward for a short time, by the priest Roque, when

* Before leaving the nunnery grounds, I ran round the end of the building, stood a moment in hesitation whether I had not better return, then hastening back to the other side, ran to the gate, opened it and went out.

prepared to enter the convent as a novice, and resolved to seek a lodging there for the night. Thither I went. It seemed as if I flew rather than ran. It was by that time so dark, that I was able to see distinctly through the low windows, by the light within; and had the pleasure to find that she was alone with her children. I therefore went boldly to the door, was received with readiness, and entered to take up my lodgings there once more.

Here I changed my nun's dress for one less likely to excite observation; and having received a few dollars in addition to make up the difference, I retired to rest, determined to rise early and take the morning steamboat for Quebec. I knew that my hostess was a friend of the Superior, as I have mentioned before, and presumed that it would not be long before she would give information against me. I knew, however, that she could not gain admittance to the convent very early, and felt safe in remaining in the house through the night.

But after I had retired I found it impossible to sleep, and the night appeared very long. In the morning early, I requested that the son of the woman might accompany me to the boat, which he did. At an early hour, therefore, I walked to the steamboat, but learnt, to my regret, that it would not go before night. Fearing that I might fall into the hands of the priests, and be carried back to the nunnery, and not knowing where to go, I turned away, and determined to seek some retired spot immediately. I walked through a part of the city, and some distance on the Lachine road, when finding a solitary place, I seated myself in much dis-

tress of mind, the power of safe anywhere for the priest people were be very dangerous would make their hands

It was a self, and as the day time my recollection of good, that gave I felt no inclination and doubt state of irresolution? Where the world to while my end to me, all thought of the space of five minutes I remained to see I have visited I received with that I had been considerations from looking the steamboat was nature to pass night; and if a great distance, and among the inhabitants.

tress of mind, both fearful and anxious, beyond my power of description. I could not think myself safe anywhere in the neighbourhood of Montreal; for the priests were numerous, and almost all the people were entirely devoted to them. They would be very desirous of finding me, and, as I believed, would make great exertions to get me again in their hands.

It was a pleasant spot where I now found myself, and as the weather was not uncomfortable in the day time, I had nothing to trouble me except my recollections and fears. As for the want of food, that gave me not the slightest uneasiness, as I felt no inclination whatever to eat. The uncertainty and doubts I continually felt, kept me in a state of irresolution the whole day. What should I do? Where should I go? I had not a friend in the world to whom I could go with confidence; while my enemies were numerous, and, it seemed to me, all around me, and ready to seize me. I thought of my uncle, who lived at the distance of five miles; and sometimes I almost determined to set off immediately for his house. I have visited it often when a child, and have been received with the utmost kindness. I remembered that I had been a great favourite of his; but some considerations would arise which discouraged me from looking for safety in that direction. The steamboat was to depart in a few hours. I could venture to pass through the city once more by twilight; and if once arrived at Quebec, I should be a great distance from the nunnery, in a large city, and among a larger proportion of Protestant inhabitants. Among them I might find friends,

or, at least, some sort of protection; and I had no doubt that I could support myself by labour.

Then I thought again of the place I had left; the kindness and sympathy, small though they were, which I had found in some of my late companions in the convent; the awful mortal sin I had committed in breaking my vows; and the terrible punishments I should receive if taken as a fugitive and carried back. If I should return voluntarily, and ask to be admitted again: what would the Superior say, how would she treat me? Should I be condemned to any very severe penance? Might I not, at least, escape death? But then there was one consideration that would now and then occur to me, which excited the strongest determination never to return. I was to become a mother, and the thought of witnessing the murder of my own child was more than I could bear.

Purgatory was doubtless my portion; and perhaps hell for ever—such a purgatory and hell as are painted in the convent: but there was one hope for me yet.

I might confess all my deadly sins sometime before I died, and a Bishop could pardon the worst of them.

This was good Catholic doctrine, and I rested upon it with so much hope, that I was not quite driven to despair.

In reflections like these, I spent the whole day afraid to stray from the secluded spot to which I had retreated, though at different times forming momentary plans to leave it, and go in various directions. I ate not a morsel of food, and yet felt no hunger. Had I been well provided, I could

have t
afterno
began
city.
one; a
was rea

Start for
permitted
passed
intended

Soon aft
had previ

He can
ter of my
long been
it may be
hesitate
avoid beir
my objec
me, and s
with him
his boat to
but intend
of our jou
affect.

When w
ay chagri
be cabin-d
left it, who
I said li
restriction

have tasted nothing in such a state of mind. The afternoon wasted away, the sun set, and darkness began to come on : I rose and set off again for the city. I passed along the streets unmolested by any one; and reached it a short time before the boat was ready to start.

CHAPTER II.

Start for Quebec—Recognized—Disappointed again—Not permitted to land—Return to Montreal—Landed and passed through the City before day—Lachine Canal—Intended close of my life.

Soon after we left the shore, the captain, whom I had previously seen, appeared to recognize me.

He came up and inquired if I was not the daughter of my mother, mentioning her name. I had long been taught and accustomed to deceive; and it may be supposed that in such a case, I did not hesitate to deny the truth, hoping that I might avoid being known, and fearing to be defeated in my object. He however persisted that he knew me, and said that he must insist on my returning with him to Montreal, adding that I must not leave this boat to land at Quebec. I said but little to him, but intended to go on shore if possible, at the end of our journey—a thing I had no doubt I might effect.

When we reached Quebec, however, I found, to my chagrin, that the ladies' maid carefully locked the cabin-door while I was in, after the ladies had left it, who were six or eight in number.

I said little, and made no attempts to resist the restriction put upon me; but secretly cherished

the hope of being able, by watching an opportunity, to slip on shore at tea-time, and lose myself among the streets of the city. Although a total stranger to Quebec, I longed to be at liberty there, as I thought I could soon place myself among persons who would secure me from the Catholics, each of whom I now looked upon as an enemy.

But I soon found that my last hopes were blighted; the maid, having received, as I presumed, strict orders from the captain, kept me closely confined, so that escape was impossible. I was distressed, it is true, to find myself in this condition; but I had already become accustomed to disappointments, and therefore perhaps sunk less under this new one, than I might otherwise have done. When the hour for departure arrived, I was therefore still confined in the steamboat, and it was not until we had left the shore that I was allowed to leave the cabin. The captain and others treated me with kindness in every respect, except that of permitting me to do what I most desired. I have sometimes suspected, that he had received notice of my escape from some of the priests, with a request to stop my flight, if I should go on board his boat. His wife is a Catholic, and this is the only way in which I can account for his conduct: still I have not sufficient knowledge of his motives and intentions to speak with entire confidence on the subject.

My time passed heavily on board of the steamboat, particularly on my passage up the river towards Montreal. My mind was too much agitated to allow me to sleep, for I was continually meditating on the scenes I had witnessed in the convent,

and anticipated to think I bought for why, a smile the name neck. As sionally su I usually v dream. S from the p times had tressing of course of Berthier, w on board, caused muc reflections.

My mind had been b and sleepin night. Som had me sh were about manner. C house, and I was to be me, and wa

When we ing, it was set off, as I ation that I time, which found diffic lay proved

and anticipating with dread such as I had reason to think I might soon be called to pass through, I bought for a trifle while on board, I hardly know why, a small medallion with a head upon it, and the name of Robertson, which I hung upon my neck. As I sat by day with nothing to do, I occasionally sunk into a doze for a few minutes, when I usually waked with a start from some frightful dream. Sometimes I thought I was running away from the priests, and closely pursued, and sometimes had no hope of escape. But the most distressing of my feelings were those I suffered in the course of the night. We stopped some time at Berthier, where a number of prisoners were taken on board, to be carried up the river; and this caused much confusion, and added to my painful reflections.

My mind became much agitated, worse than it had been before; and what between waking fears, and sleeping visions, I spent a most wretched night. Sometimes I thought the priests and nuns had me shut up in a dungeon: sometimes they were about to make away with me in a most cruel manner. Once I dreamed that I was in some house, and a coach came up to the door, into which I was to be put by force; and the man who seized me, and was putting me in, had no head.

When we reached Montreal on Saturday morning, it was not daylight; and the captain, landing, set off, as I understood, to give my mother information that I was in his boat. He was gone a long time, which led to conjecture that he might have found difficulty in speaking with her; but the delay proved very favourable to me, for perceiving

that I was neither locked up nor watched, I hastened on shore, and pursued my way into the city. I felt happy at my escape : but what was I then to do ? Whither could I go ? Not to my mother : I was certain I could not remain long with her, without being known to the priests.

My friendlessness and utter helplessness, with the dread of being murdered in the convent, added to the thoughts of the shame that must await me if I lived a few months, made me take a desperate resolution, and I hurried to put it into effect.

My object was to reach the head of the Lachine canal, which is near the St. Lawrence, beyond the extremity of the southern suburbs. I walked hastily along St. Paul's-street, and found all the houses still shut; then turning to the old Recollet Church, I reached Notre-Dame-street, which I followed in the direction I wished to go.

The morning was chilly, as the season was somewhat advanced; but that was of no importance to me. Day had appeared, and I desired to accomplish the object on which I was now bent, before the light should much increase. I walked on therefore, but the morning had broken bright before I arrived at the canal; and then I found to my disappointment, that two Canadians were at work on the bank, getting water, or doing something else.

I was by the great basin where the boats start, and near the large canal storehouse. I had not said what was my design: it was to drown myself.

Fearing the men would rescue me, I hesitated for some time, hoping they would retire: but find-

ing that the
looking on
with the ban
celve for so
disturb the
sight which
me; I looked
death, and lo
finding that t
place, I sprun
stant in the c
vere. I felt a
me, which alm
sible; and the
I was sinking
as ice, which w
over.

wake among str
a Vagrant—Int
House—Remova
to my Mother's
ments for going

ow long I rem
about three m
were blow on
as I saw myself
reat deal, and
ty about me.
ere I lived, an
water; but I
w which I had

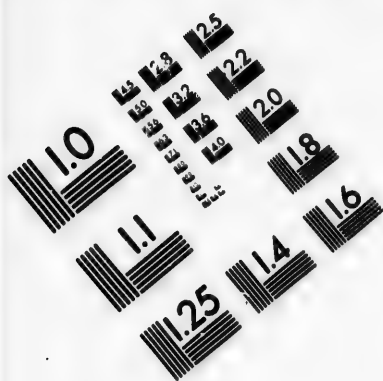
ing that they would not, I grew impatient. I stood looking on the water; it was nearly on a level with the banks, which shelved away, as I could perceive for some distance, there being no wind to disturb the surface. There was nothing in the sight which seemed frightful or even forbidding to me; I looked upon it as the means of the easiest death, and longed to be buried below. At length finding that the men were not likely to leave the place, I sprang from the bank, and was in an instant in the cold water. The shock was very severe. I felt a sharp freezing sensation run through me, which almost immediately rendered me insensible; and the last thing I can recollect was, that I was sinking in the midst of water almost as cold as ice, which wet my clothes, and covered me all over.

CHAPTER III.

Awake among strangers—Dr. Robertson—Imprisoned as a Vagrant—Introduction to my Mother—Stay in her House—Removal from it to Mrs. McDonald's—Return to my Mother's—Desire to get to New York—Arrangements for going.

How long I remained in the canal I know not; but about three minutes, as I conjectured, I felt a severe blow on my right side; and opening my eyes I saw myself surrounded by men who talked a great deal, and expressed much anxiety and curiosity about me. They inquired of me my name, where I lived, and why I had thrown myself into the water; but I would not answer a word. The blow which I had felt, and which was probably the





18 20 22 25 28 32 36 40 45 50 56 63 71 80 90 100

1.0 1.1 1.2 1.5 2.0 2.5 3.2 4.0 5.0 6.3 8.0 10.0 12.5 16.0 20.0 25.0 32.0 40.0 50.0 63.0 80.0 100.0

cause of bringing me for a few moments to my senses, I presume was caused by falling, after I was rescued, upon the stones, which lay thickly scattered near the water. I remember that the persons around me continued to press me with questions, and that I still remained silent. Some of them having observed the little medallion on my neck, and being able to read, declared that I was probably a daughter of Dr. Robertson, as it bore the name; but to this, I also gave no answer, and sunk again into a state of unconsciousness.

When my senses once more returned, I found myself lying in a bed covered up warm, in a house, and heard several persons talking of the mass, from which they had just returned. I could not imagine where I was, for my thoughts were not easily collected, and every thing seemed strange around me. Some of them, on account of the name on the little medallion, had sent to Dr. Robertson, to inform him that a young woman had been prevented from drowning herself in the basin, who had a portrait on her neck, with his family name stamped upon it; and he had sent word, that although she could be no relation of his, they had better bring her to his house, as he possibly might be able to learn who she was. Preparations were therefore made to conduct me thither; and I was soon in his house. This was about midday, or a little later.

The doctor endeavoured to draw from me some confession of my family: but I refused; my feelings would not permit me to give him any satisfaction. He offered to send me to my home if I would tell him where I lived; but at length, thinking

unreason-
send me
In a s
was dete
hands of
a private
I had
dren, but
unknown
me; and,
flattered m
was, at first
evening, b
The next m
if I were no
name; and
that I must
surprisingly
truth; but
Mr. Esson, a
saying I had
made his app
myself, an
om confinen
why I sh
Contrary to
formed my
sisted betwe
which I would
ude to it,
which are imp
to bear m
of the pe
all not att

unreasonable and obstinate, began to threaten to send me to jail.

In a short time I found that the latter measure was determined on, and I was soon put into the hands of the jailer, Captain Holland, and placed in a private room in his house.

I had formerly been acquainted with his children, but had such strong reasons for remaining unknown that I hoped they would not recognize me; and, as we had not met for several years, I flattered myself that such would be the case. It was, at first, as I had hoped; they saw me in the evening, but did not appear to suspect who I was. The next morning, however, one of them asked me if I were not sister of my brother, mentioning his name; and though I denied it, they all insisted that I must be, for the likeness, they said, was surprisingly strong. I still would not admit the truth; but requested they would send for the Rev. Mr. Esson, a Presbyterian clergyman in Montreal, saying I had something to say to him. He soon made his appearance, and I gave him some account of myself, and requested him to procure my release from confinement, as I thought there was no reason why I should be deprived of my liberty.

Contrary to my wishes, however, he went and informed my mother. An unhappy difference had existed between us for many years, concerning which I would not speak, were it not necessary to allude to it, to render some things intelligible which are important to my narrative. I am willing to bear much of the blame; for my drawing out of the pension had justly irritated her. I will not attempt to justify or explain my own

feelings with respect to my mother, whom I still regard, at least in some degree, as I ought. I will merely say, that I thought she indulged in partialities and antipathies in her family during my childhood, and that I attribute my entrance into the nunnery, and the misfortunes I have suffered, to my early estrangement from home, and my separation from the family. I had neither seen her nor heard from her for several years; and knew not whether she had even known of my entrance into the convent, although I now learnt that she still resided where she formerly did.

It was therefore with regret that I heard that my mother had been informed of my condition; and that I saw an Irishwoman, an acquaintance of hers, come to take me to the house. I had no doubt that she would think that I had disgraced her, by being imprisoned, as well as by my attempt to drown myself; and what would be her feelings towards me, I could only conjecture.

I accompanied the woman to my mother's, and found nearly such a reception as I had expected. Notwithstanding our mutual feelings were much as they had been, she wished me to stay with her, and kept me in one of her rooms for several weeks, and with the utmost privacy, fearing that my appearance would lead to questions, and that my imprisonment would become known. I soon satisfied myself that she knew little of what I had passed through, within the few past years; and did not think it prudent to inform her, for that would greatly have increased the risk of my being discovered by the priests. We were surrounded by those who went frequently to confession, and would have

thought breaking from a place of heaven. of the poor person as I felt as I felt to religion concealment suspect it. lies, "a s veil, my le a forsaking As things time undist the house, fortnight. When he pressed much seen him for evil, that I have, and therefore, co rry or inter es. The tr and priests, r virtue on What were ards me, I ard, that sh ave me remo man came ing admitte

thought me a monster of wickedness, guilty of breaking the most solemn vows, and a fugitive from a retreat which is generally regarded there as a place of great sanctity, and almost like a gate to heaven. I well knew the ignorance and prejudices of the poor Canadians, and understood how such a person as myself must appear in their eyes. They felt as I formerly had, and would think it a service to religion and to God to betray the place of my concealment, if by chance they should find, or even suspect it. As I had become in the eyes of Catholics, "a spouse of Jesus Christ," by taking the veil, my leaving the convent must appear to them a forsaking of the Saviour.

As things were, however, I remained for some time undisturbed. My brother, though he lived in the house, did not know of my being there for a fortnight.

When he learnt it, and came to see me he expressed much kindness towards me: but I had not seen him for several years, and had seen so much evil, that I knew not what secret motives he might have, and thought it prudent to be reserved. I, therefore, communicated to him nothing of my history or intentions, and rather repulsed his advances. The truth is, I had been so long among nuns and priests, that I thought there was no sincerity or virtue on earth.

What were my mother's wishes or intentions towards me, I was not informed: but I found afterwards, that she must have made arrangements to have me removed from her house, for one day a woman came to the door with a carriage, and on being admitted to see me, expressed herself in a

friendly manner, spoke of the necessity of air and exercise for my health, and invited me to take a ride. I consented, supposing we should soon return; but when we reached St. Antoine suburbs, she drove up to a house which I had formerly heard to be some kind of refuge, stopped, and requested me to alight. My first thought was, that I should be exposed to certain detection, by some of the priests whom I presumed officiated there; as they had all known me in the nunnery. I could not avoid entering: but I resolved to feign sickness, hoping thus to be placed out of sight of the priests.

The result was according to my wishes: for I was taken to an upper room, which was used as an infirmary, and there permitted to remain. There were a large number of women in the house; and a Mrs. M'Donald, who has the management of it, had her daughters in the Ursuline Nunnery at Quebec, and her son in the College. The nature of the establishment I could not fully understand: but it seemed to me designed to become a Nunnery at some future time.

I felt pretty safe in the house, as long as I was certain of remaining in the infirmary; for there was nobody there who had ever seen me before. But I resolved to avoid, if possible, ever making my appearance below, for I felt that I could not do so without hazard of discovery.

Among other appendages of a Convent, which I observed in that place, was a confessional within the building, and I soon learnt, to my dismay, that Father Bonin, one of the murderers of Saint Francis, was in the habit of constant attendance at

priest an
often indu
me uneas
where to
in the infi
ness in t
found that
tion with r
the close o
could not
pearance be
the wishes
the commun
accustomed
the women
merely ex
when they p
ay fear of d
and I plainly
ed to an a
house pron
ould not ke
he, in fact,
at she sent
My mother
e, and took
me so unhap
d destitute
y requested
ieve she fel
ce, that she
attempt at
prison made
There was a

priest and confessor. The recollections which I often indulged in of scenes in the Hotel Dieu, gave me uneasiness and distress: but not knowing where to go to seek greater seclusion, I remained in the infirmary week after week, still affecting illness in the best manner I could. At length I found that I was suspected of playing off a deception with regard to the state of my health; and at the close of a few weeks, I became satisfied that I could not remain longer without making my appearance below stairs. I at length complied with the wishes I heard expressed, that I would go into the community-room, where those in health were accustomed to resemble at work, and then some of the women began to talk of my going to confession. I merely expressed unwillingness at first: but when they pressed the point, and began to insist, my fear of detection overcame every other feeling, and I plainly declared that I would not go. This led to an altercation, when the mistress of the house pronounced me incorrigible, and said she would not keep me for a hundred pounds a year. She, in fact, became so weary of having me there, that she sent to my mother to take me away.

My mother, in consequence, sent a carriage for me, and took me again into her house; but I became so unhappy in a place where I was secluded and destitute of all agreeable society, that I earnestly requested her to allow me to leave Canada. I believe she felt ready to have me removed to a distance, that she might not be in danger of having an attempt at self-destruction, and my confinement in prison made public.

There was a fact which I had not disclosed, and

of which all were ignorant: viz., that which had so much influence in exciting me to leave the convent, and to reject every idea of returning to it.

When conversing with my mother about leaving Canada, I proposed to go to New York. She inquired why I wished to go there. I made no answer to that question; for though I had never been there, and knew scarcely any thing about the place, I presumed that I should find protection from my enemies, as I knew it was in a Protestant country. I had not thought of going to the United States before, because I had no one to go with me, nor money enough to pay my expenses; but then a plan presented itself to my mind, by which I thought I might proceed to New York in safety.

There was a man who I presumed would wish to have me leave Canada, on his own account; and that was the man I had so precipitately married while residing at St. Denis. He must have had motives, as I thought, for wishing me at a distance.* I proposed, therefore, that he should be informed that I was in Montreal, and anxious to go to the States, and such a message was sent to him by a woman whom my mother knew. She had a little stand for the sale of some articles, and had a husband who carried on some similar kind of business at the Scotch mountain. Through her husband, as I suppose, she had my message conveyed and soon informed me that arrangements were made for my commencing my journey, under the care of the person to whom it had been sent.

* He was liable to be prosecuted for bigamy whilst he remained in Canada.—ED.

Singular
to get t
—Comm
Stop at
Arrived

It is rem
the mids
last obtain
fight. T
who wou
power of t
known my
She was
the Semin
every Mon
the former
the Superi
portunity t
was willing
parture fro
to me of he
pects in w
and I confid
felt no stron
my mother.
Should a
ret of my l
ery, I knew
or an instar
transform h
ould at on
an apostate

CHAPTER IV.

Singular concurrence of circumstances, which enabled me to get to the United States—Intentions in going there—Commence my journey—Fears of my companion—Stop at Whitehall—Injury received in a canal boat—Arrived at New York—A solitary retreat.

It is remarkable that I was able to stay so long in the midst of Catholics without discovery, and at last obtain the aid of some of them in effecting my flight. There is probably not a person in Montreal, who would sooner have betrayed me into the power of the priests than that woman, if she had known my history.

She was a frequent visitor at the Convent and the Seminary, and had a ticket which entitled her every Monday to the gift of a loaf of bread from the former. She had an unbounded respect for the Superior and the priests, and seized every opportunity to please them. Now the fact that she was willing to take measures to facilitate my departure from Montreal, afforded sufficient evidence to me of her entire ignorance of myself, in all respects in which I could wish her to be ignorant; and I confided in her, because I perceived that she felt no stronger motive, than a disposition to oblige my mother.

Should any thing occur to let her into the secret of my being a fugitive from the Black Nunnery, I knew that I could not trust to her kindness for an instant. The discovery of that fact would transform her into a bitter and deadly enemy. She would at once regard me as guilty of mortal sin, an apostate, and a proper object of persecution.

And this was a reflection I had often reason to make, when thinking of the numerous Catholics around me. How important, then, the keeping of my secret, and my escape before the truth should become known, even to a single person near me.

I could realize, from the dangers through which I was brought by the hand of God, how difficult it must be, in most cases, for a fugitive from a nunnery to obtain her final freedom from the power of her enemies. Even if escaped from a convent, so long as she remains among Catholics, she is in constant exposure to be informed against; especially if the news of her escape is made public, which fortunately was not the fact in my case.

If a Catholic comes to the knowledge of any fact calculated to expose such a person, he will think it his duty to disclose it at confession; and then the whole fraternity will be in motion to seize her.

How happy for me that not a suspicion was entertained concerning me, and that not a whisper against me was breathed into the ear of a single priest at confession!

Notwithstanding my frequent appearance in the streets, my removals from place to place, and the various exposures I had to discovery, contrary to my fears, which haunted me even in my dreams, I was preserved; and as I have often thought, for the purpose of making the disclosures contained in this volume. No power but that of God, as I have frequently thought, could ever have led me in safety through so many dangers.

I would not have my readers imagine, however, that I had at that period any thought of making known my history to the world. I wished to

plung
next to
the pri
idea of
I had
lishing
that tin
a spec
and my
for my
with glo
self as
reach of
elapsed
religious
scripture
that I sh
sions in v
The pla
journey w
to Longu
pany me.
into the c
crossed th
we found
to accom
at his own
prehensive
priests wh
an indirect
nearly that
a much gr
would be n
all the plac

plunge into the deepest possible obscurity; and next to the fear of falling again into the hands of the priests and Superior, I shrunk most from the idea of having others acquainted with the scenes I had passed through. Such a thought as publishing never entered my mind till months after that time. My desire was, that I might meet with a speedy death in obscurity, and that my name and my shame might perish on earth together. As for my future doom, I still looked forward to it with gloomy apprehensions: for I considered myself as almost, if not quite, removed beyond the reach of mercy. During all the time which had elapsed since I left the convent, I had received no religious instruction, nor even read a word in the scriptures; and, therefore, it is not wonderful that I should still have remained under the delusions in which I had been educated.

The plan arranged for the commencement of my journey was this; I was to cross the St. Lawrence to Longueil, to meet the man who was to accompany me. The woman who had sent my message into the country, went with me to the ferry, and crossed the river, where, according to appointment, we found my companion. He willingly undertook to accompany me to the place of my destination, and at his own expense; but declared, that he was apprehensive we should be pursued. To avoid the priests who, he supposed would follow us, he took an indirect route, and during about twelve days, or nearly that, which we spent on the way, passed over a much greater distance than was necessary. It would be needless, if it were possible, to mention all the places we visited. We crossed Carpenter's

ferry, and were at Scotch-mountain and St. Albans; arrived at Champlain by land, and there took the steamboat, leaving it again at Burlington.

As we were riding towards Charlotte, my companion entertained fears, which, to me, appeared ridiculous: but it was impossible for me to reason him out of them, or to hasten our journey. Circumstances which appeared to me of no moment whatever, would often influence, and sometimes make him change his whole plan and direction. As we were one day approaching Charlotte, for instance, on inquiring of a person on the way, whether there were any Canadians there, and being informed that there were not a few, and that there was a Roman Catholic Priest residing there, he immediately determined to avoid the place, and turn back, although we were then only about nine miles distant from it.

During several of the first nights after leaving Montreal, he suffered greatly from fear; and on meeting me in the morning, repeatedly said: "Well, thank God, we are safe so far!" When we arrived at Whitehall, he had an idea that we should run a risk of meeting priests, who, he thought, were in search of us, if we went immediately on; and insisted that we had better stay there a little, until they should have passed. In spite of my anxiety to proceed, we accordingly remained there about a week, when we entered a canal-boat to proceed to Troy.

An unfortunate accident happened to me while on our way. I was in the cabin, when a gun, which had been placed near me, was started from its place by the motion of the boat, caused by

another
my l
shock
but h
afterw
alarm
was a
We
Troy t
ing, ei
but my
formin
more.
reach o
being c
to deat
where I
with my
and yet
destroy
On th
itary ret
from a v
ble, hop
Not k
spoke to
told him
lead me
word by
or forest
he told m
but conse
that he
followed

another boat running against it, and striking me on my left side, threw me to some distance. The shock was violent, and I thought myself injured, but hoped the effects would soon pass off. I was afterward taken with vomiting blood; and this alarming symptom several times returned; but I was able to keep up.

We came, without any unnecessary delay, from Troy to New York, where we arrived in the morning, either on Thursday or Friday, as I believe: but my companion there disappeared without informing me where he was going, and I saw him no more. Being now, as I presumed, beyond the reach of my enemies, I felt relief from the fear of being carried back to the nunnery, and sentenced to death or the cells; but I was in a large city where I had not a friend. Feeling overwhelmed with my miserable condition, I longed for death; and yet I felt no desire to make another attempt to destroy myself.

On the contrary, I determined to seek some solitary retreat, and await God's time to remove me from a world in which I had found so much trouble, hoping and believing that it would not be long.

Not knowing which way to go to find solitude, I spoke to a little boy whom I saw on the wharf, and told him I would give him some money if he would lead me into the "*bush*." (This is the common word by which, in Canada, we speak of the woods or forests.) When he understood what I meant, he told me that there was no *bush* about New York; but consented to lead me to the most lonely place that he knew of. He accordingly set off, and I followed him, on a long walk to the upper part of

the city, and beyond, until we reached the outskirts of it. Turning off from the road, we gained a little hollow, where were a few trees and bushes, a considerable distance from any house; and there he told me, was the loneliest place with which he was acquainted. I paid him for his trouble out of the small stock of money I had in my possession, and let him go home, desiring him to come the next day, and bring me something to eat, with a few pennies which I gave him.

CHAPTER V.

Reflection and sorrows in solitude—Night—Fears—Exposure to rain—Discovered by Strangers—Their unwelcome kindness—Taken to the Bellevue Almshouse.

THESE I found myself once more alone, and truly it was a great relief to sit down and feel that I was out of the reach of the priests and nuns, and in a spot where I could patiently wait for death, when God might please to send it, instead of being abused and tormented according to the caprices and passions of my persecutors.

But then again returned most bitter anticipations of the future. Life had no attractions for me, for it must be connected with shame; but death, under any circumstances, could not be divested of horrors, so long as I believed in the doctrines relating to it which had been inculcated upon me.

The place where I had taken up, as I supposed, my last earthly abode, was pleasant in clear and mild weather; and I spent most of my time in as much peace as the state of my mind would permit.

I saw he
side of a
at work,
mering a
that I fel
from obs
bushes c
evening
the sound
ber of lab
work. I
bushes,
and then
turf.

Darkne
fears of a
me that th
bourhood,
and the m
alarmed.
but I knew
beast migh
dition, an
bushes, an
ground:
my mind
the future
In the r
ance again
had purch
in me, inc
it was with
let me rem
tion. Un

I saw houses, but no human beings, except on the side of a little hill near by, where were some men at work, making sounds like those made in hammering stone. The shade around me was so thick that I felt assured of being sufficiently protected from observation if I kept still; and a cluster of bushes offered me a shelter for the night. As evening approached, I was somewhat alarmed by the sound of voices near me, and found that a number of labourers were passing that way from their work. I went in a fright to the thickest of the bushes, and lay down, until all was again still, and then ventured out to take my seat again on the turf.

Darkness now came gradually on; and with it, fears of another description. The thought struck me that there might be wild beasts in that neighbourhood, ignorant as I then was of the country; and the more I thought of it, the more I became alarmed. I heard no alarming sound, it is true; but I knew not how soon some prowling ferocious beast might come upon me in my defenceless condition, and tear me in pieces. I retired to my bushes, and stretched myself under them upon the ground: but I found it impossible to sleep; and my mind was continually agitated by thoughts on the future or the past.

In the morning the little boy made his appearance again, and brought me a few cakes which he had purchased for me. He showed much interest in me, inquired why I did not live in a house; and it was with difficulty that I could satisfy him to let me remain in my solitary and exposed condition. Understanding that I wished to continue un-

known, he assured me that he had not told even his mother about me; and I had reason to believe that he faithfully kept my secret to the last. Though he lived a considerable distance from my hiding-place, and, as I supposed, far down in the city, he visited me almost every day, even when I had not desired him to bring me any thing. Several times I received from him some small supplies of food for the money I had given him. I once gave him a half-dollar to get changed; and he brought me back every penny of it, at his next visit.

As I had got my drink from a brook or pool, which was at no great distance, he brought me a little cup one day to drink out of; but this I was not allowed to keep long, for he soon after told me that his mother wanted it, and he must return it. He several times arrived quite out of breath, and when I inquired the reason, calling him as I usually did, "Little Tommy," he said it was necessary for him to run, and to stay but a short time, that he might be at school in good season. Thus he continued to serve me, and keep my secret, at great inconvenience to himself, up to the last day of my stay in that retreat; and I believe he would have done so for three months if I had remained there. I should like to see him again, and hear his broken English.

I had now abundance of time to reflect on my lost condition; and many a bitter thought passed through my mind, as I sat on the ground, or strolled about by day, and lay under the bushes at night.

Sometimes I reflected on the doctrines I had

heard at
ces, Purg
late comp
the conve
Someti
how I mi
would sin
familiar;
pray, as I
me.

One of
condition
the thicke
tion again
I was almo
may be su
night than
and the w
garments b
ng them c
however, I
ad the sa
with: but
ither occas
ary from
ace. The
so, appear
fficient to
es; and I
uncomfortable
ing as soc
at spot.
One day,
a days, I

heard at the nunnery, concerning sins and penances, Purgatory and Hell; and sometimes on my late companions, and the crimes I had witnessed in the convent.

Sometimes I would sit and seriously consider how I might best destroy my life; and sometimes would sing a few of the hymns with which I was familiar; but I never felt willing or disposed to pray, as I supposed there was no hope of mercy for me.

One of the first nights I spent in that houseless condition was stormy; and though I crept under the thickest of the bushes, and had more protection against the rain than one might have expected, I was almost entirely wet before morning; and, it may be supposed, passed a more uncomfortable night than usual. The next day I was happy to find the weather clear, and was able to dry my garments by taking off one at a time, and spreading them on the bushes. A night or two after, however, I was again exposed to a heavy rain, and had the same process afterward to go through with: but what is remarkable, I took no cold on either occasion; nor did I suffer any lasting injury from all the exposures I underwent in that place. The inconveniences I had to encounter, also, appeared to me of little importance, not being sufficient to draw off my mind from its own troubles; and I had no intention of seeking a more comfortable abode, still looking forward only to being as soon as God would permit, alone and in that spot.

One day, however, when I had been there about six days, I was alarmed at seeing four men ap-

proaching me. All of them had guns, as if out on a shooting excursion. They expressed much surprise and pity on finding me there, and pressed me with questions. I would not give them any satisfactory account of myself, my wants, or intentions, being only anxious that they might withdraw. I found them, however, too much interested to render me some service to be easily sent away; and after some time, thinking there would be no other way, I pretended to go away not to return. After going some distance, and remaining some time, thinking they had left the place, I returned; but to my mortification found they had concealed themselves to see whether I would come back. They now, more urgently than before, insisted on my removing to some other place, where I might be comfortable. They continued to question me; but I became distressed in a degree I cannot describe, hardly knowing what I did. At last I called the oldest gentleman aside, and told him something of my history. He expressed great interest for me, offered to take me any where I would tell him, and at last insisted that I should go with him to his own house. All these offers I refused; one which one proposed to take me to the Almshouse, and even to carry me by force if I would not go willingly.

To this I at length consented; but some delay took place, and I became unwilling, so that with reluctance I was taken to that institution, which was about half a mile distant.*

* See the affidavit of Mr. Hilliker, page 97, "Confirmation of Maria Monk's Disclosures."—Ed.

Reception of
a Roman
vate inter
—Mr. Kel

was now
with kindn
such a p
people are
re to be da
are of the
not occur to
But in sp
athy from
mel thankful
I was sta
om numb
the hospi
ce visited
ding-place
me respect
ough I suf
re punish
nt vows, I
oying my
After I ha
and it was
a fugitiv
Irish wo
ught me
ne agitati
I was sitti
tron, eng

CHAPTER VI.

Reception at the Almshouse—Message from Mr. Conroy, a Roman priest in New York—His invitation to a private interview—His claims, propositions, and threats—Mr. Kelly's message—Effects of reading the Bible.

I WAS NOW at once made comfortable, and attended with kindness and care. It is not to be expected in such a place, where so many poor and suffering people are collected, and duties of a difficult nature are to be daily performed by those engaged in the care of the institution, that petty vexations should occur to individuals of all descriptions.

But in spite of all, I received kindness and sympathy from several persons around me, to whom I feel thankful.

I was standing one day at the window of the room number twenty-six, which is at the end of the hospital building, when I saw a spot I once visited in a little walk I took from my lodging-place. My feelings were different now in some respects, from what they had been; for, though I suffered much from my fears of my future punishment, for the sin of breaking convent vows, I had given up the intention of destroying my life.

After I had been some time in the institution, I found it was reported by some about me, that I was a fugitive nun; and it was not long after, that an Irish woman, belonging to the institution, brought me a secret message, which caused me some agitation.

I was sitting in the room of Mrs. Johnson, the patron, engaged in sewing, when that Irish wo-

man, employed in the institution, came in and told me that Mr. Conroy was below, and had sent to see me. I was informed that he was a Roman priest, who often visited the house, and he had a particular wish to see me at that time; having come, as I believe, expressly for that purpose. I showed unwillingness to comply with such an invitation, and did not go. The woman told me further, that he sent me word that I need not think to avoid him, for it would be impossible for me to do so. I might conceal myself as well as I could, but I should be found and taken. No matter where I went, or what hiding-place I might choose, I should be known; and I had better come at once. He knew who I was; and he was authorized to take me to the Sisters of Charity, if I should prefer to join them. He would promise that I might stay with them if I choose, and be permitted to remain in New York. He sent me word further, that he had received full power and authority over me from the Superior of the Hotel Dieu Nunnery of Montreal, and was able to do all that she could do: as her right to dispose of me at her will had been imparted to him by a regular writing received from Canada. This was alarming information for me in the weak state which I was in at the time. The woman added, that the same authority had been given to all the priests; so that where I might, I should meet men informed about me and my escape, and fully empowered to seize me wherever they could, and convey me back to the convent from which I had escaped.

Under these circumstances, it seemed to me that the offer to place me among the Sisters of Charity

with permission
and favour
not to see

Not long
messenger
ing, and
the gentlemen
stop might
to receive
however, the
ished to
St. Eusebius
essed to P
at it was
short time
gain that the
back word the
e Rev. Mr.
however, was
formed, the
sent an hour
requently be
was employed
d no occasion
n. I after
y continued
I never
ve the in
arity; but
time for
the des
posed.

As the per
sometimes the

me in and told me I had sent to see the priest Conroy. I was a Roman Catholic, and he had a great deal of time; having no other business at purpose. With such an introduction, the woman told me I need not think it impossible for me to see him, as well as I could. No matter, I might choose to go, or better come to him. He was authorized by the Sisters of Charity, if I would promise to choose, and be obedient. He sent me full power and authority of the Hotel, as able to do as I pleased to dispose of me, and to send him by a regular messenger. This was alarming to me, which I was told, that the same was the case with the priests; so that the men informed me, that I was empowered to convey me back to my country, if I escaped.

Not long afterward, I was informed by the same messenger, that the priest was again in the building, and repeated his request. I desired one of the gentlemen connected with the institution that stop might be put to such messages, as I wished to receive no more of them. A short time after, however, the woman told me that Mr. Conroy wished to inquire of me, whether my name was not St. Eustace while a nun, and if I had not confessed to Priest Kelly in Montreal. I answered, that it was all true; for I had confessed to him a short time while in the nunnery. I was then told again that the priest wanted to see me, and I sent back word that I would see him in the presence of the Rev. Mr. Tappin, or Mr. Stephens; which, however, was not agreed to; and I was afterwards informed, that Mr. Conroy, the Roman priest, spent an hour in a room and a passage where I had frequently been; but through the mercy of God, I was employed in another place at that time, and had no occasion to go where I should have met him. I afterwards repeatedly heard that Mr. Conroy continued to visit the house, and to ask for me; but I never saw him. I once had determined to leave the institution, and go to the Sisters of Charity; but circumstances occurred which gave me time for further reflection; and I was saved from the destruction to which I should have been exposed.

As the period of my accouchement approached, I sometimes thought that I should not survive it;

and then the recollection of the dreadful crimes I had witnessed in the nunnery would come upon me very powerfully, and I would think it a solemn duty to disclose them before I died. To have a knowledge of these things, and leave the world without making them known, appeared to me like a great sin : whenever I could divest myself of the impression made upon me, by the declarations and arguments of the Superior, nuns, and priests, of the duty of submitting to everything, and the necessary holiness of whatever the latter did or required.

The evening but one before the period which I anticipated with so much anxiety, I was sitting alone, and began to indulge in reflections of this kind. It seemed to me that I must be near the close of my life, and I determined to make a disclosure at once. I spoke to Mrs. Ford, a woman whose character I respected, a nurse in the hospital, in number twenty-three. I informed her that I had no expectation of living long, and had some things on my mind which I wished to communicate before it should be too late. I added, that I should prefer to tell them to the Rev. Mr. Tappin, the chaplain, of which she approved, as she considered it a duty to do so under these circumstances. I had no opportunity, however, to converse with Mr. T. at that time, and probably my purpose of disclosing the facts already given in this book, would never have been executed but for what subsequently took place.

It was alarm which had led me to form such determination: and when the period of trial had been safely passed, and I had a prospect of reco-

ery, any
that I sh
I was
part of m
sure, was
Roman C
of the cor
I thought
the Churo
performed
ba. I ha
that I con
revocably
have allow
his day, I
my hand,
even as an
that I migh
ear and di
nt to thin
my time
fate mig
e power o
I had, h
ild destin
en baptis
rough the
the truth
cause nev
satisfy m
st be, wo
a to thin
w could
ch had h

ful crimes I
come upon me
k it a solemn
l. To have a
ave the world
red to me like
st myself of the
eclarations and
d priests, of the
and the neces-
did or required

period which
y, I was sitting
flections of this
ust be near the
to make a dis-
Ford, a woman
rse in the hospi-
nformed her that
g, and had some-
ed to commun-
I added, that
Rev. Mr. Tappin
ved, as she con-
these circumstan-
ever, to convert
nd probably m-
already given
n executed but f-

e to form such
eriod of trial b-
prospect of reco-

ery, any thing appeared to me more likely than that I should make this exposure.

I was then a Roman Catholic, at least a great part of my time; and my conduct, in a great measure, was according to the faith and motives of a Roman Catholic. Notwithstanding what I knew of the conduct of so many of the priests and nuns, I thought that it had no effect on the sanctity of the Church, or the authority or effects of the acts performed by the former at the mass, confession, &c. I had such a regard for my vows as a nun, that I considered my hand as well as my heart irrevocably given to Jesus Christ, and could never have allowed any person to take it. Indeed, to this day, I feel an instinctive aversion to offering my hand, or taking the hand of another person, even as an expression of friendship. I also thought that I might soon return to the Catholics, although fear and disgust held me back. I had now that instant to think for, whose life I had happily saved by my timely escape from the nunnery; and what fate might be in case it should ever fall into the power of the priests, I could not tell.

I had, however, reason for alarm. Would a child destined to destruction, like the infants I had seen baptized and smothered, be allowed to go through the world, unmolested, a living memorial of the truth of crimes long practised in security, because never exposed? What pledges could I get to satisfy me, that I, on whom her dependence must be, would be spared by those who I had reason to think were then wishing to sacrifice me? How could I trust the helpless infant in hands which had hastened the baptism of many such in

order to hurry them to the secret pit in the cellar? Could I suppose that *Father Phelan, Priest of the Parish Church of Montreal*, would see his own child growing up in the world, and feel willing to run the risk of having the truth exposed? What could I expect, especially from him, but the utmost rancour, and the most determined enmity against the innocent child and its abused and defenceless mother.

Yet my mind would sometimes still incline in the opposite direction, and indulge the thought that perhaps the only way to secure heaven to us both, was to throw ourselves back into the hands of the Church, to be treated as she pleased. When, therefore, the fear of immediate death was removed, I renounced all thoughts of communicating the substance of the facts in this volume. It happened, however, that my danger was not passed. I was soon seized with very alarming symptoms; then my desire to disclose my story revived.

I had before had an opportunity to speak in private with the chaplain; but, as it was at a time when I supposed myself out of danger, I had deferred for three days my proposed communication, thinking that I might yet avoid it altogether. When my symptoms, however, became more alarming, I was anxious for Saturday to arrive, the day which I had appointed; and when I had not the opportunity on that day which I desired, I thought it might be too late. I did not see him till Monday day, when my prospects of surviving were very gloomy; and I then informed him that I wished to communicate to him a few secrets, which were likely otherwise to die with me. I then told him

that w
had w
Franc
which
some f
in gene
of in th
My a
ed; for
not ma
very po
howeve
instructi
from son
who, tak
darkened
Bible, an
desired it
I soon
tended th
reading h
exercise o
sibility to
It is di
to such a
I had bee
think ari
tures alw
them; bu
learn the
been early
a some d
* See Mr
Maria Mon

that while a nun, in the Convent of Montreal, I had witnessed the murder of a nun called Saint Francis, and of at least one of the infants which I have spoken of in this book. I added some few circumstances, and I believe disclosed, in general terms, some of the other crimes I knew of in that nunnery.*

My anticipations of death proved to be unfounded; for my health afterward improved, and had I not made the confessions on that occasion, it is very possible I never might have made them. I however, afterward, felt more willing to listen to instruction, and experienced friendly attentions from some of the benevolent persons around me who, taking an interest in me on account of my darkened understanding, furnished me with the Bible, and were ever ready to counsel me when I desired it.

I soon began to believe that God might have intended that his creatures should learn his will by reading his word, and taking upon them the free exercise of their reason, and acting under responsibility to him.

It is difficult for one who has never given way to such arguments and influences as those to which I had been exposed, to realize how hard it is to think aright after thinking wrong. The Scriptures always affect me powerfully when I read them; but I feel that I have but just begun to learn the great truths, in which I ought to have been early and thoroughly instructed. I realize, in some degree, how it is, that the Scriptures ren-

* See Mr. T's statement, page 101, "Confirmation of Maria Monk's Awful Disclosures."—Ed.

der the people of the United States so strongly opposed to such doctrines as are taught in the Black and the Congregational Nunneries of Montreal. The priests and nuns used often to declare, that of all heretics, the children from the United States were the most difficult to be converted; and it was thought a great triumph when one of them was brought over to "the true faith." The first passage of Scripture that made any serious expression upon my mind, was the text on which the chaplain preached on the Sabbath after my introduction into the house—"Search the Scriptures."

I made some hasty notes of the thoughts to which it gave rise in my mind, and often recurred to the subject. Yet I sometimes questioned the justice of the views I began to entertain, and was ready to condemn myself for giving my mind any liberty to seek for information concerning the foundation of my former faith.

CHAPTER VII.

Proposition to go to Montreal and testify against the Priests—Commencement of my journey—Stop at Troy, Whitehall, Burlington, St. Alban's, Plattsburgh, and St. John's—Arrival at Montreal—Reflections on passing the Nunnery, &c.

ABOUT a fortnight after I had made the disclosures mentioned in the last chapter, Mr. Hoyt called at the Hospital to make inquiries about me. I was introduced to him by Mr. Tappin. After some conversation, he asked me if I would consent to

visit
priest
expres
that I
curred
night,
possibl
my ter
were m
clothes
partiall
Our
Mr. Ho
engaged
stood, v
pected
boat; an
with som
history,
be deepl
testimony
determin
our way
pany us,
perienced
us in pro
the expos
guainted.
We trav
acket, be
to my sta
Rev. Mr.
Hoyt was
made to a

so strongly
right in the
es of Mon-
n to declare,
the United
converted;
when one of
faith." The
any serious
xt on which
after my in-
the Scrip-

thoughts to
often recurred
uestioned the
tain, and was
my mind any
concerning the

tify against the
y—Stop at Troy,
Plattsburgh, and
ections on pas-

the disclosures
Hoyt called at
ut me. I was
. After some
ould consent to

visit Montreal, and give my evidence against the priests and nuns before a court. I immediately expressed my willingness to do so, on condition that I should be protected. It immediately occurred to me, that I might enter the Nunnery at night, and bring out the nuns in the cells, and possibly Jane Ray, and that they would confirm my testimony. In a short time arrangements were made for our journey. I was furnished with clothes; and although my strength was as yet but partially restored, I set off in pretty good spirits.

Our journey was delayed for a little time, by Mr. Hoyt's waiting to get a companion. He had engaged a clergyman to accompany us, as I understood, who was prevented from going by unexpected business. We went to Troy in a steamboat; and, while there, I had several interviews with some gentlemen who were informed of my history, and wished to see me. They appeared to be deeply impressed with the importance of my testimony; and on their recommendation it was determined that we should go to St. Alban's on our way to Montreal, to get a gentleman to accompany us, whose advice and assistance, as an experienced lawyer, were thought to be desirable to us in prosecuting the plan we had in view: viz, the exposure of the crimes with which I was acquainted.

We travelled from Troy to Whitehall in a canal packet, because the easy motion was best adapted to my state of health. We met, on board, the Rev. Mr. Sprague, of New York, with whom Mr. Hoyt was acquainted, and whom he tried to persuade to accompany us to Montreal. From White-

hall to Burlington we proceeded in a steamboat; and there I was so much indisposed, that it was necessary to call a physician. After a little rest, we set off in the stage for St. Alban's; and on arriving, found that Judge Turner was out of town. We had to remain a day or two before he returned; and then he said it would be impossible for him to accompany us. After some deliberation, it was decided that Mr. Hunt should go to Montreal with us, and that Judge Turner should follow and join us there as soon as his health and business would permit.*

We therefore crossed the lake by the ferry to Plattsburg, where, after some delay, we embarked in a steamboat, which took us to St John's. Mr. Hunt, who had not reached the ferry early enough to cross with us, had proceeded on to * * *, and there got on board the steamboat in the night. We went on to Laprairie with little delay, but finding that no boat was to cross the St. Lawrence at that place during the day, we had to take another private carriage to Longueil, whence we were rowed across to Montreal by three men, in a small boat.

I had felt quite bold and resolute when I first consented to go to Montreal, and also during my journey: but when I stepped on shore in the City, I thought of the different scenes I had witnessed there, and of the risks I might run before I should leave it. We got into a caleche, and rode along towards the hotel where we were to stop. We

* Mr. Hunt was recommended as a highly respectable lawyer; to whose kindness, as well as to that of Judge Turner, I feel myself under obligations.

pass
dush
came
recol
wind
some
wond
were
I wer
in the
haps b
I reme
the wh
taken
duct of
Those
use all
again in
And c
asperate
less nun
* My gl
I had hop
I propose
that even
journey to
to follow t
under the
into the c
their cells
I was awa
ing, and th
desperate
treal, thou
and that I
deed. I th
but that se

passed up St. Paul's street; and, although it was dusk, I recognised every thing I had known. We came at length to the nunnery; and then many recollections crowded upon me. First I saw a window from which I had sometimes looked at some of the distant houses in that street; and I wondered whether some of my old acquaintances were employed as formerly. But I thought that if I were once within those walls, I should soon be in the cells for the remainder of my life, or perhaps be condemned to something still more severe. I remembered the murder of Saint Francis, and the whole scene returned to me as if it had just taken place; the appearance, language and conduct of the persons most active in her destruction. Those persons were now all near me, and would use all exertions they safely might, to get me again into their power.

And certainly they had greater reason to be exasperated against me, than against that poor helpless nun who had only expressed a wish to escape.*

* My gloomy feelings, however, did not always prevail. I had hopes of obtaining evidence to prove my charges. I proposed to my companions to be allowed to proceed that evening to execute the plan I had formed when a journey to Montreal had first been mentioned. This was, to follow the physician into the nunnery, conceal myself under the red calico sofa in the sitting-room, find my way into the cellar after all was still, release the nuns from their cells, and bring them out to confirm my testimony. I was aware that there were hazards of my not succeeding, and that I must forfeit my life if detected—but I was desperate; and feeling as if I could not long live in Montreal, thought I might as well die one way as another, and that I had better die in the performance of a good deed. I thought of attempting to bring out Jane Ray—but that seemed quite out of the question, as an old nun

When I found myself safely in Goodenough's hotel, in a retired room, and began to think alone, the most gloomy apprehensions filled my mind. I could not eat, I had no appetite, and I did not sleep all night. Every painful scene I had ever passed through, seemed to return to my mind; and such was my agitation, I could fix my thoughts upon nothing particular. I had left New York when the state of my health was far from being established; and my strength, as may be presumed, was now much reduced by the fatigue of travelling. I shall be able to give but a faint idea of the feelings with which I passed that night, but must leave it to the imagination of my readers. Now once more in the neighbourhood of the convent, and surrounded by the nuns and priests, of whose conduct I had made the first disclosures ever known, surrounded by thousands of persons devoted to them, and ready to proceed to any outrage, as I feared, whenever their interference might be desired, there was abundant reason for my uneasiness.

is commonly engaged in cleaning a community-room through which I should have to pass; and how could I hope to get into and out of the sleeping-room unobserved? I could not even determine that the imprisoned nuns would follow me out—for they might be afraid to trust me. However I determined to try, and, presuming my companions had all along understood and approved my plan, told them I was ready to go at once. I was chagrined and mortified more than I can express, when they objected, and almost refused to permit me. I insisted, and urged the importance of the step—but they represented its extreme rashness. This conduct of theirs, for a time, diminished my confidence in them, although every body else has approved of it.

I n
ment
visit t
to lay
in a m
torture
it. F
much
things
and ho
But my
care for
I was
who ha
immedi
gation.
tion in c
agitated
I might
still und
would b
I imagin
enemies

I wen
as if I w
ing I wo

* It occ
by some p
I appeare
quested o
hers. I o
I left the
street, I f
thought o
me,

I now began to realise that I had some attachment to life remaining. When I consented to visit the city, and furnish the evidence necessary to lay open the iniquity of the convent, I had felt, in a measure, indifferent to life; but now, when torture and death seemed at hand, I shrunk from it. For myself, life could not be said to be of much value. How could I be happy with such things to reflect upon as I had passed through? and how could I enter society with gratification? But my infant I could not abandon, for who would care for it if its mother died?

I was left alone in the morning by the gentlemen who had accompanied me, as they went to take immediate measures to open the intended investigation. Being alone, I thought of my own position in every point of view, until I became more agitated than ever. I tried to think what persons I might safely apply to as friends; and, though still undecided what to do, I arose, thinking it would be unsafe to remain any longer exposed, as I imagined myself, to be known and seized by my enemies.

I went from the hotel*, hurried along, feeling as if I were on my way to some asylum, and thinking I would first go to the house where I had sev-

* It occurred to me, that I might have been seen by some person on landing, who might recognize me if I appeared in the streets in the same dress; and I requested one of the female servants to lend me some of her. I obtained a hat and shawl from her, with which I left the house. When I found myself in Notre Dame street, I felt the utmost indecision what to do, and the thought of my friendless condition almost overpowered me.

eral times previously found a temporary refuge. I did not stop to reflect that the woman was a devoted Catholic and friend to the Superior; but thought only of her kindness to me on former occasions, and hastened along Notre Dame street. But I was approaching the Seminary; and a resolution was suddenly formed to go and ask the pardon and intercession of the Superior. Then the character of Bishop Lartique seemed to present an impossible obstacle; and the disagreeable aspect and harsh voice of the man, as I recalled him, struck me with horror. I recollected him as I had known him when engaged in scenes concealed from the eye of the world. The thought of him made me decide not to enter the Seminary. I hurried, therefore, by the door; and the great church being at hand, my next thought was to enter there. I reached the steps, walked in, dipped my finger into the holy water, crossed myself, turned to the first image I saw, which was that of Saint Magdalen, threw myself upon my knees, and began to repeat prayers with the utmost fervour. I am certain that I never felt a greater desire to find relief from any of the Saints; but my agitation hardly seemed to subside during my exercise, which continued, perhaps, a quarter of an hour or more. I then rose from my knees, and placed myself under the protection of St. Magdalen and St. Peter by these words: "*Je me mets sous votre protection*"—(I place myself under your protection); and added, "*Sainte Marie, mere du bon pasteur, prie pour moi*"—(Holy Mary, mother of the good shepherd, pray for me.)

I then resolved to call once more at the house

where
the nu
that di
kept by
with.

mediate

I ente
her go s
the city.
however
near by,
she went
from her
proposin
she had
What thi
jecture.
something
back into
testimony
I felt a
ther, and
and uncer
on nothing
left the ho
ar object
ant, and
was very i
rough th
windmills.
rough th
I once
uch mist

where I had found a retreat after my escape from the nunnery, and proceeded along the streets in that direction. On my way, I had to pass a shop kept by a woman* I formerly had an acquaintance with. She happened to see me passing, and immediately said, "Maria, is that you? Come in."

I entered, and she soon proposed to me to let her go and tell my mother that I had returned to the city. To this I objected. I went with her, however, to the house of one of her acquaintances near by, where I remained some time, during which she went to my mother's and came with a request from her, that I would have an interview with her, proposing to come up and see me, and saying that she had something very particular to say to me. What this was, I could not with any certainty conjecture. I had my suspicions that it might be something from the priests, designed to get me back into their power, or, at least, to suppress my testimony.

I felt an extreme repugnance to seeing my mother, and in the distressing state of apprehension and uncertainty in which I was, could determine on nothing, except to avoid her. I therefore soon left the house, and walked on without any particular object. The weather was then very unpleasant, and it was raining incessantly. To this I was very indifferent, and walked on till I had got through the suburbs, and found myself beyond the windmills. Then I returned, and passed back through the city, still not recognized by anybody.

I once saw one of my brothers, unless I was much mistaken, and thought he knew me. If it

* This was Mrs. Tarbert.

was he, I am confident he avoided me, and that was my belief at the time, as he went into the yard with the appearance of much agitation. I continued to walk up and down most of the day, fearful of stopping anywhere, lest I should be recognized by my enemies, or betrayed into their power. I felt all the distress of a feeble, terrified woman, in need of protection, and, as I thought, without a friend in whom I could safely confide. It distressed me extremely to think of my poor babe; and I had now been so long absent from it, as necessarily to suffer much inconvenience.

I recollected to have been told, in the New York Hospital, that laudanum would relieve distress both bodily and mental, by a woman who urged me to make trial of it. In my despair, I resolved to make an experiment with it, and entering an apothecary's shop, asked for some. The apothecary refused to give me any; but an old man who was there told me to come in, inquired where I had been, and what was the matter with me, seeing that I was quite wet through. I let him know that I had an infant, and on his urging me to tell more, I told him where my mother lived. He went out, and soon after returned, accompanied by my mother, who told me she had my child at home, and pressed me to go to her house and see it, saying she would not insist on my entering, but would bring it out to me.

I consented to accompany her; but on reaching the door, she began to urge me to go in, saying I should not be known to the rest of the family, but might stay there in perfect privacy. I was resolved not to comply with this request, and resisted

her en
a long
went in
perate
ing, the
food, re
ed the p
body, ex
ing, but
my moth
me in th
part of t
bability
of the
me; suff
bold, but
ling imp
soon ease
hoped tha
there; bu
expectatio
At leng
who, as
after my
entrusted
after I ha
that she n
read him
to walk
ndergone
nder the
table w

me, and that
t into the yard
n. I continu-
e day, fearful
be recognized
eir power. I
ied woman, in
ght, without a
e. It distress-
r babe; and I
t, as necessari-

a the New York
relieve distress
man who urged
pair, I resolved
and entering an
e. The apothec-
an old man who
quired where I
r with me, see-

I let him know
rging me to tell
ther lived. He
accompanied by
had my child at
r house and see
on my entering

but on reaching
go in, saying
of the family, but
ey. I was resol-
st, and resisted a

her entreaties, though she continued to urge me for a long time, perhaps half an hour. At length she went in, and I walked away, in a state no less desperate than before. Indeed, night was approaching, the rain continued, and I had no prospect of food, rest, or even shelter. I went on till I reached the parade-ground, unnoticed, I believe, by anybody, except one man, who asked where I was going, but to whom I gave no answer. I had told my mother, before she left me, that she might find me in the parade-ground. There I stopped, in a part of the open ground where there was no probability of my being observed, and stood thinking of the many distressing things which harassed me; suffering, indeed, from exposure to wet and cold, but indifferent to them as evils of mere trifling importance, and expecting that death would soon ease me of my present sufferings. I had hoped that my mother would bring my babe to me there; but as it was growing late, I gave up all expectations of seeing her.

At length she came, accompanied by Mr. Hoyt, who, as I afterwards learnt, had called on her after my leaving the hotel, and at her request, had entrusted my child to her care. Calling again after I had left her house, she had informed him that she now knew where I was, and consented to lead him to the spot. I was hardly able to speak or to walk, in consequence of the hardships I had undergone; but being taken to a small inn, and put under the care of several women, I was made comfortable with a change of clothes and a warm bed.

CHAPTER VIII.

Received into a hospitable family—Fluctuating feelings—Visits from several persons—Father Phelan's declarations against me in his church—Interviews with a Journeyman Carpenter—Arguments with him.

In the morning I received an invitation to go to the house of a respectable Protestant, an old inhabitant of the city, who had been informed of my situation; and although I felt hardly able to move, I proceeded thither in a carriage, and was received with a degree of kindness, and treated with such care, that I must ever retain a lively gratitude towards the family.

On Saturday I had a visit from Doctor Robertson, to whose house I had been taken soon after my rescue from drowning. He put a few questions to me, and soon withdrew.

On Monday, after the close of mass, a Canadian man came in, and entered into conversation with the master of the house in an adjoining room. He was, as I understood, a journeyman carpenter, and a Catholic, and having heard that a fugitive nun was somewhere in the city, began to speak on the subject in French. I was soon informed that Father Phelan had just addressed his congregation with much apparent excitement about myself; and thus the carpenter had received his information. Father Phelan's words, according to what I heard said by numerous witnesses, at different times, must have been much like the following:—

"There is a certain nun now in this city, who has left our faith, and joined the Protestants. She has a child, of which she is ready to swear I am

the father
away m
her, I w
guard y
say. T

a-days,
lieve her

Before
he burst
come.

sed, a nu
some of
human
spirit, wh

ing admi
the rules

ance, he
Antichris

break dow

The jo
house wh
and had o
out any su
trailed aga
wards lear
him that h
tioned tha
ary with c
to which t
belief.

"You c
he house,
stairs, for s

'I see h

the father. She would be glad in this way to take away my gown from me. If I knew where to find her, I would put her in prison. I mention this to guard you against being deceived by what she may say. The devil has such a hold upon people now-a-days, that there is danger that some might believe her story."

Before he concluded his speech, as was declared, he burst into tears, and appeared to be quite overcome. When the congregation had been dismissed, a number of them came round him, and he told some of them that I was Antichrist; I was not a human being, as he was convinced, but an evil spirit, who had got among the Catholics, and being admitted into the nunnery, where I had learnt the rules so that I could repeat them. My appearance, he declared, was a fulfilment of prophecy, as Antichrist is foretold to be coming, in order to break down, if possible, the Catholic religion.

The journeyman carpenter had entered the house where I lodged under these impressions, and had conversed some time on the subject, without any suspicion that I was near. After he had railed against me with such violence, as I afterwards learned, the master of the house informed him that he knew something of the nun, and mentioned that she charged the priests of the Seminary with crimes of an awful character; in reply to which the carpenter expressed the greatest disbelief.

"You can satisfy yourself," said the master of the house, "if you will take the trouble to step up stairs, for she lives in my family."

'I see her!' he exclaimed—"No, I would not

see the wretched creature for any thing. I wonder you are not afraid to have her in your house.—She will bewitch you all.—The evil spirit !”

After some persuasion, however, he came into the room where I was sitting, but looked at me with every appearance of dread and curiosity: and his exclamations, and subsequent conversation, in Canadian French, were very ludicrous.

“Eh bin,” he began on first seeing me, “c’est ici la malheureuse ?” (Well, is this the poor creature?) But he stood at a distance, and looked at me with curiosity and evident fear. I asked him to sit down, and tried to make him feel at his ease, by speaking in a mild and pleasant tone. He soon became so far master of himself, as to enter into conversation.

“I understood,” said he, “that she has said very hard things against the priests. How can that be true?” “I can easily convince you,” said I, “that they do what they ought not, and commit crimes of the kind I complain of. You are married, I suppose?” He assented. “You confessed, I presume, on the morning of your wedding-day?” He acknowledged that he did. “Then did not the priest tell you at confession, that he had had intercourse with your intended bride, but that it was for her sanctification, and that you must never reproach her with it?”

This question instantly excited him, but he did not hesitate a moment to answer it. “Yes,” replied he, “and that looks black enough.” I had put the question to him, because I knew the practice to which I alluded had prevailed at St. Denis while I was there, and believed it to be universal,

or at le
of Can
that ev
such ex
duct of
any of t
from bel
mind of
ment he
ing my t

Further
which I
often dec
out thing
person, th
the priests
afterward
convent to
ured me t
ad once l
St. Jacques
they would
egan to c
er further
fected by
ccession.
made me t
“to go
as in no h
Then he
xt momen
am all the
n became
gan to rub

or at least very common in all the Catholic parishes of Canada. I thought I had reason to presume that every Catholic, married in Canada, had had such experience, and that an allusion to the conduct of the priest, in this particular, must compel any of them to admit that my declarations were far from being incredible. This was the effect on the mind of the simple mechanic, and from that moment he made no more serious questions concerning my truth and sincerity during that interview.

Further conversation ensued, in the course of which I expressed the willingness which I have often declared, to go into the convent and point out things which would confirm, to any doubting person, the truth of my heaviest accusations against the priests and nuns. At length he withdrew, and afterward entered, saying, that he had been to the convent to make inquiries concerning me. He assured me that he had been told that, although I had once belonged to the nunnery, I was called St. Jacques, and not St. Eustace; and that now they would not own or recognize me. Then he began to curse me, but yet sat down, as if disposed for further conversation. It seemed as if he was affected by the most contrary feelings, and in rapid succession. One of the things he said, was to persuade me to leave Montreal. "I advise you," said he, "to go away to-morrow." I replied, that I was in no haste, and might stay a month longer.

Then he fell to cursing me once more; but the next moment broke out against the priests, calling them all the names he could think of. His passion became so high against them, that he soon began to rub himself, as the low Canadians, who

are apt to be very passionate, sometimes do, to calm their feelings, when they are excited to a painful degree. After this explosion he again became quite tranquil, and turning to me, in a frank and friendly manner, said, "I will help you in your measures against the priests; but tell me, first—you are going to print a book, are you not?" "No," said I, "I have no thoughts of that."

Then he left the house again, and soon returned, saying, he had been at the Seminary, and seen a person who had known me in the nunnery, and said I had been only a novice, and that he would not acknowledge me now. I sent back word by him, that I would show one spot in the nunnery that would prove I spoke the truth. Thus he continued to go and return several times, saying something of the kind every time, until I became tired of him. He was so much enraged once or twice during some of the interviews, that I felt somewhat alarmed; and some of the family heard him swearing as he went down stairs: "Ah, sacre—that is too black!"

He came at last, dressed up like a gentleman, and told me he was ready to wait on me to the nunnery. I expressed my surprise that he should expect me to go with him alone, and told him I had never thought of going without some protector; still assuring him, that, with any person to secure my return, I would cheerfully go all over the nunnery, and show sufficient evidence of the truth of what I alleged.

My feelings continued to vary: I was sometimes fearful, and sometimes so courageous as to think seriously of going into the Recolet church during

mass
'he pr
should
preven

A milk
Affida

ANOTH
me was
had seen
blamed
question
body but
so, and t
if I woul
for myse
known th
between

The ne
in a very
church in
Phelan t
whom he
and accus
possessed
before the
loor. H

* I did not
publicly to
as require
and denied

mass with my child in my arms, and calling upon the priest to own it. And this I am confident I should have done, but for the persuasions used to prevent me."

CHAPTER IX.

A milkman—An Irishwoman—Difficulty of having my Affidavit taken—Legal objection to it when taken.

ANOTHER person who expressed a desire to see me was an Irish milkman. He had heard, what had seemed to be pretty generally reported, that I blamed none but the Irish priests. He put the question, whether it was a fact that I accused nobody but Father Phelan. I told him it was not so, and this pleased him so well, that he told me, if I would stay in Montreal, I should have milk for myself and child as long as I lived. It is well known that strong antipathies have long existed between French and Irish Catholics in that city.

The next day the poor Irishman returned, but in a very different state of mind. He was present at church in the morning, he said, when Father Phelan told the congregation that the nun of whom he had spoken before, had gone to court and accused him; and that he, by the power he possessed, had struck her powerless as she stood before the judge, so that she sunk helpless on the floor. He expressed, by the motion of his hands,

* I did not make up my mind (so far as I remember), publicly to proclaim who was the father of my child, unless required to do so, until I learned that Father Phelan had denied it.

the unresisting manner in which she had sunk under the mysterious influence, and declared that she would have died on the spot, but that he had chosen to keep her alive that she might retract her false accusation. This, he said she did, most humbly, before the court, acknowledging that she had been paid a hundred pounds as a bribe.

The first words of the poor milkman, on revisiting me, therefore, were like these: "That's to show you what power the priest has! Didn't he give it you in the court? It is to be hoped you will leave the city now." He then stated what he had heard Father Phelan say, and expressed his entire conviction of its truth, and the extreme joy he felt on discovering, as he supposed he had, that his own priest was innocent, and had gained such a triumph over me.

A talkative Irishwoman also made her appearance, among those who called at the house, and urged for permission to see me. Said she, "I have heard dreadful things are told by a nun you have here, against the priests; and I have come to convince myself of the truth. I want to see the nun you have got in your house." When informed that I was unwell, and not inclined at present to see any more strangers, she still showed much disposition to obtain an interview. "Well, aint it too bad," she asked, "that there should be any reason for people to say such things against the priests?" At length she obtained admittance to the room where I was, entered with eagerness, and approached me.

"Arrah," she exclaimed, "God bless you—is this you? Now sit down, and let me see the

child.
you?
I wan
Irish
means
you w
will se
for pu
priests
tell him
spirit.
"Come
self. I
having
I hea
great di
take my
this was
prevent
made pu
been em
to a Fre
pared in
him that
oath. W
justice sa
away from
city, to be
matter ab
I have r
his perso
had a wo
is own la
the bot

e had sunk
eclared that
that he had
t retract her
e did, most
ing that she
bribe.

n, on revisi-
"That's to
! Didn't he
e hoped you
stated what he
expressed his
e extreme joy
posed he had,
nd had gained

le her appear-
the house, and
Said she, "I
by a nun you
d I have come
want to see the
When inform-
ned at present
showed much
"Well, aint it
should be any
ngs against the
admittance to
e eagerness, and

d bless you—is
et me see the

child. And it is Father Phelan's, God bless you? But they say you tell about murders; and I want to know if they are all committed by the Irish priests." "Oh no," replied I, "by no means." "Then God bless you," said she. "If you will live in Montreal, you shall never want. I will see that neither you nor your child ever want, for putting part of the blame upon the French priests. I am going to Father Phelan, and I shall tell him about it. But they say you are an evil spirit. I want to know whether it is so or not." "Come here," said I, "feel me, and satisfy yourself. Besides, did you ever hear of an evil spirit having a child."

I heard from those about me, that there was great difficulty in finding a magistrate willing to take my affidavit. I am perfectly satisfied that this was owing to the influence of the priests to prevent my accusations against them from being made public. One evening, a lawyer who had been employed for the purpose, accompanied me to a French justice with an affidavit ready prepared in English for his signature, and informed him that he wished him to administer to me the oath. Without any apparent suspicion of me, the justice said, "Have you heard of the nun who ran away from the convent, and has come back to the city, to bear witness against the priests?" "No matter about that now," replied the lawyer hastily; "I have no time to talk with you—will you take this person's oath now or not?" He could not read a word of the document, because it was not in his own language, and soon placed his signature at the bottom. It proved however, that we had

gained nothing by this step, for the lawyer afterward informed us, that the laws required the affidavit of a nun and a minor to be taken before a superior magistrate.

CHAPTER X.

Interview with the Attorney General of the Province—Attempt to abduct me—More interviews—A mob excited against me—Protected by two soldiers—Convinced that an investigation of my charges could not be obtained—Departure from Montreal—Closing reflections.

THOSE who had advised to the course to be pursued, had agreed to lay the subject before the highest authorities. They soon came to the conviction that it would be in vain to look for any favour from the Governor, and resolved to lay it before the Attorney General as soon as he should return from Quebec. After waiting for some time he returned; and I was informed, in a few days that he had appointed an interview on the following morning. I went at the time with a gentleman of the city, to the house of Mr. Grant, a distinguished lawyer. In a short time a servant invited us to walk upstairs, and we went; but after I had entered a small room at the end of a parlour, the door was shut behind me by Mr. Ogden, the Attorney General. A chair was given me, which was placed with the back towards a bookcase, at which a man was standing, apparently looking at the books: and besides the two persons I have mentioned, there was but one more in the room, Mr. Grant, the master of the house. Of the first

* Unless another was concealed—as I suspected.

part
T
exam
be a
able,
writi
ever,
One o
the co
I to
and in
answer
afraid
and at
he was
was ask
in the r
partly r
was and
looked a
ing to a
every w
appearan
had seen
or attit
whose n
quested
nunnery
Virgin, s
At len
I could j
the exam
might go
I then

part of the interview I shall not particularly speak.

The two legal gentlemen at length began a mock examination of me, in which they seemed to me to be actuated more by a curiosity no way commendable, than a sincere desire to discover the truth, writing down a few of my answers. In this, however, the person behind me took no active part. One of the questions put to me was, "What are the colours of the carpet in the Superior's room?"

I told what they were, when they turned to him, and inquired whether I had told the truth. He answered only by a short grunt of assent, as if afraid to speak, or even to utter a natural tone; and at the same time by his hastiness, showed that he was displeased that my answer was correct. I was asked to describe a particular man I had seen in the nunnery, and did so. My examiner turned partly round with some remark or question which was answered in a similar spirit. I turned and looked at the stranger, who was evidently skulking to avoid my seeing him, and yet listening to every word that was said. I saw enough in his appearance to become pretty well satisfied that I had seen him before; and something in his form or attitude reminded me strongly of the person whose name had been mentioned. I was then requested to repeat some of the prayers used in the nunnery, and repeated part of the office of the Virgin, and some others.

At length, after I had been in the little room, as I could judge, nearly an hour, I was informed that the examination had been satisfactory, and that I might go.

I then returned home; but no further step was

taken by the Attorney General, and he refused, as I understood, to return my affidavit, which had been left in his hands to act upon.

Besides the persons I have mentioned, I had interviews with numbers of others. I learnt from some, that Father Phelan addressed his congregation a second time concerning me, and expressly forbade them to speak to me if they should have an opportunity, on pain of excommunication. It was also said, that he prayed for the family I lived with, that they might be converted.

I repeated to several different persons my willingness to go into the nunnery, and point out visible evidences of the truth of my statements; and when I was told by one man, who said he had been to the priests, that I had better leave the city, or I would be clapped into prison, I made up my mind that I should like to be imprisoned a little while, because then, I thought, I could not be refused a public examination.

Some Canadians were present one day, when the mistress of the house repeated, in my presence, that I was ready to go into the nunnery if protected, and, if I did not convince others of the truth of my assertions, that I would consent to be burned.

"O yes, I dare say," replied one of the men—"the devil would take her off,—she knows he would. He would take care of her—we should never be able to get her—the evil spirit."

A woman present said—"I could light the fire to burn you, myself."

A woman of Montreal, who has a niece in the nunnery, on hearing of what I declared about it,

said
down
An
were
but
calm
be no
On
Phelan
he said
the h
to set
no ser
it evi
make
I w
day, in
a plan
into th
the vo
cognis
her fri
"Y
"N
her on
I w
to the
* I fe
this wo
ther Ph
embold
and he
out, I s
"God

said that if it was true she would help to tear it down.

Among those who came to see me, numbers were at first as violent as any I have mentioned, but after a little conversation, became mild and calm. I have heard persons declare, that it would be no harm to kill me, as I had an evil spirit.

One woman told me, that she had seen Father Phelan in the street, talking with a man, to whom he said, that the people were coming to tear down the house in which I stayed, intending afterward to set fire to it in the cellar. This story gave me no serious alarm, for I thought I could see through it evidence of an intention to frighten me, and make me leave the city.*

I was under great apprehensions, however, one day, in consequence of an accidental discovery of a plan laid to take me off by force. I had stepped into the cellar to get an ironholder, when I heard the voices of persons in the street above, and recognised those of my mother and the Irishwoman her friend. There was another woman with them.

"You go in and lay hold of her," said one voice.

"No, you are her mother—you go in and bring her out—we will help you."

I was almost overcome with dread of falling into their hands, believing that they would deliver

* I felt very confident, from some circumstances, that this woman had been sent to bring such a story by Father Phelan; and such evidence of his timidity rather emboldened me. I was in another room when she came, and heard her talking on and abusing me; then coming out, I said, "How dare you say I do not speak the truth?" "God bless you," said she, "sit down and tell me all."

me up to the Superior. Hastening into a room, I got behind a bed, told the lady of the house the cause of my fear, and calling to a little girl to bring me my child, I stood in the state of violent agitation. Expecting them in the house every instant, and fearing my infant might cry, and lead them to the place of my concealment, I put my hand upon its mouth to keep it quiet.

It was thought desirable to get the testimony of the mistress of the house where I spent the night, after my escape from the nunnery, as one means of substantiating my story. I had been there the day before my visit to the house of Mr. Grant, accompanied by a friend, and on my first inquiring of her about my nunnery dress, she said she had carried it to the Superior; speaking with haste, as if she apprehended I had some object very different from what I actually had. It now being thought best to summon her as a witness before a magistrate, and not knowing her whole name, we set off again towards her house to make inquiry.

On our way we had to pass behind the paradi. I suddenly heard an outcry from a little gallery in the rear of a house which fronts another way, which drew my attention. "There's the nun, there's the nun!" exclaimed a female, after twice clapping her hands smartly together, "There's the nun, there's the nun."

I looked up, and whom should I see but the Irishwoman, who had taken so active a part, on several occasions, in my affairs, on account of her friendship for my mother—the same who had accompanied me to Longeuil in a boat, when I set

out for
my jo
again
doubt
since
her C
out:
again
lay hol
to piec
And
while
came r
diately
might
til we r
on to p
so; an
ing to
peaceal
which r
per not
the sold
began t
of the s
he obse
in the c
them go
guard a
was don
one whe
ing the
guarded
All o

to a room, I
the house the
the girl to bring
violent agita-
every instant,
lead them to
my hand upon

the testimony
e I spent the
nery, as one
I had been
house of Mr.
d on my first
dress, she said
speaking with
l some object
had. It now
as a witness be-
ing her whole
house to make

d the parade. I
little gallery in
another way,
ere's the nun,
ale, after twice
r, "There's the

I see but the
ative a part, on
account of her
ne who had ac-
at, when I set

out for New York, after making arrangements for my journey. She now behaved as if exasperated against me to the utmost; having, as I had no doubt, learnt the object of my journey to Montreal since I had last spoken with her, and having all her Catholic prejudices excited. She screamed out: "There's the nun that's come to swear against our dear Father Phelan. Arrah, lay hold, lay hold upon her! Catch her, kill her, pull her to pieces."

And so saying she hurried down to the street, while a number of women, children, and some men, came running out, and pursued after me. I immediately took to flight, for I did not know what they might do; and she, with the rest, pursued us, until we reached two soldiers, whom we called upon to protect us. They showed a readiness to do so; and when they learnt that we were merely going to a house beyond, and intended to return peaceably, consented to accompany us. The crowd, which might rather be called a mob, thought proper not to offer us any violence in the presence of the soldiers, and after following us a little distance, began to drop off, until all had disappeared. One of the soldiers, however, soon after remarked, that he observed a man following us, whom he had seen in the crowd, and proposed that instead of both of them going before us, one should walk behind, to guard against any design he might have. This was done; and we proceeded to a house near the one where I had found a refuge, and after obtaining the information we sought, returned, still guarded by the soldiers.

All our labour in this case, however, proved un-

availing ; for we were unable to get the woman to appear in court.

At length it was found impossible to induce the magistrates to do any thing in the case ; and arrangements were made for my return to New York. While in the ferry-boat crossing from Montreal to Laprairie, I happened to be standing near two little girls, when I overheard the following conversation.

"Why do you leave Montreal so soon?"

"I had gone to spend a week or two; but I heard that Antichrist was in the city, and was afraid to be there. So I am going right home. I would not be in Montreal while Antichrist is there. He has come to destroy the Catholic religion."

I felt quite happy when I found myself once more safe in New York ; and it has only been since my return from Montreal, and the conviction I had there formed, that it was in vain for me to attempt to get a fair investigation into the Hotel Dieu Nunnery, that I seriously thought of publishing a book.

CHAPTER XI.

Recollection of several things which happened at different periods—Records made by me of my "disclosures"—My first opinion of Miss Reed's book—Intention to confess while in the Bellevue Asylum—Interview with a New York lady about to become a nun.

SINCE the publication of my first edition, I have had different things brought to my memory, which I had forgotten while reviewing in it the past scenes of my life. Some of these have presented

them
or b
mind
num
inter
refre
conve
Hilli
in tak
life a
house
held i
did no
I did
vit, th
pieces
me.
die.
declar
by sta
taken
ed me
the lit
Somet
by oth
some
worst
nery,
which
ever a
I there
per ;
broug
his mo

themselves to me while meditating alone, by day or by night; and others have been brought to mind by conversing with others. I have seen a number of my former acquaintances, and in my interviews with them, my memory has often been refreshed on one subject or another. During a conversation I had in March last, with Mr. John Hilliker of New York, who by so kindly persisting in taking me from my exposed retreat, saved my life as I believe, and introduced me to the Alms-house, he recalled to my mind a paper which I held in my hand when he found me in a field. I did not mention that paper in my Sequel, because I did not think of it. He mentions, in his affidavit, that I refused to let him see it, and tore it in pieces, when I found he was resolved to remove me. I had made up my mind that I was soon to die. Indeed, although I have felt unwilling to declare it heretofore, my intention had been to die by starvation, in the lonely place where I had taken my abode. Sometimes this resolution failed me for a time, and I would eat, and even send the little boy who visited me, to buy a few cakes. Sometimes, also, I thought of destroying my life by other means; but still thinking it would have some merit in the sight of God, to disclose the worst of the crimes I had witnessed in the Nunnery, I determined to leave behind me a record which might be picked up after my death, whenever and however that event might come upon me. I therefore one day sent Tommy to buy me some paper; and, understanding I wanted to write, he brought me an inkstand and pen, as I believe from his mother's house. I wrote a brief statement of

the woman to
to induce the
case; and ar-
n to New York.
m Montreal to
g near two lit-
wing conversa-

soon?"
or two; but I
e city, and was
right home. I
tichrist is there.
ic religion."
and myself once
s only been since
conviction I had
or me to attempt
the Hotel Dieu
of publishing a

happened at differ-
my "disclosures"
book—Intention to
m—Interview with
a nun.

t edition, I have
y memory, which
g in it the past
e have presented

facts upon the paper, and folded it, I believe, in the form of a letter, after signing it, as I think, with my Christian name only, "Maria." This was the paper which Mr. Hilliker endeavoured to obtain, and which I tore, to prevent it from being seen, when I thought death was not so near as I had supposed.

The Sunday before the birth of my child, I again wrote, with similar feelings, and in a similar style, and hid the paper. But I afterwards took it again and burnt it.

While I was in the Asylum, a gentleman who had Miss Reed's book, ("Six Months in a Convent,") read some passages in my presence, which irritated me so much that I spoke to him with passion, and I fear almost insulted him. I had never heard of such a person or such a book before, but I believed every thing I heard, because it corresponded with my own experience, so far as it went; but I thought, at that moment, that it was wrong to make known such things to the world, as it was calculated to injure the Church: in such an unsettled state did my mind continue to be for a considerable time. It was perfectly evident to me, however, that the institution where she was, must be materially different from the Black Nunnery, as it was far from being so close, or governed by such strict rules. She also had been in it too short a time to learn all; and besides, being only a novice, it was impossible that she should be fully acquainted with many things which are communicated only to nuns.

While I was in the Asylum, I had once made up my mind to confess to Mr. Conroy, after receiv-

ing h
strong
about
that I
woman
and in
obeyin
came
urged
mind,
man,
author
I had
than i
had rig
tect me
sion.

I ha
Catholi
if they
Since t
ceived
consequ
content
able nu
that I
doubts
I have
receive
with in
that I k
ment.
there d
minds,

, I believe, in
it, as I think,
Maria." This
endeavoured to
t it from being
ot so near as I

of my child, I
and in a simi-
ut I afterwards

gentleman who
onths in a Con-
presence, which
to him with pas-
m. I had never
book before, but
because it corre-
so far as it went;
at it was wrong
e world, as it was
in such an un-
e to be for a con-
y evident to me,
re she was, must
Black Nunnery,
or governed by
d been in it too
sides, being only
he should be fully
ich are communi-

I had once made
nroy, after receiv-

ing his invitations and threatening messages, being strongly urged by some of the Catholic women about me. It happened, most fortunately for me, that I was befriended and advised by an excellent woman, Mrs. Neil, who took great pains to instruct and influence me aright. When I had decided on obeying the summons of the priest, Mrs. Neil came in, and having ascertained my intention, urged me to reflect, and impressed it upon my mind, that I was responsible to God, and not to man, for my conduct, and that his power and authority over me were only pretended. I believe I had then sometimes more confidence in priests than in God Almighty. She assured me that I had rights, and had friends there who would protect me. I then determined not to go to confession.

I have generally found it easier to convince Catholics than Protestants of the truth of my story, if they come to me with doubts or even unbelief. Since the first appearance of my book, I have received visits from a great number of persons in consequence of what they had seen or heard of its contents; and among these have been a considerable number of Catholics. While I am able to say that I have had the satisfaction of removing all doubts from the minds of some Protestants whom I have seen, I must confess that in general I have received the greatest satisfaction from interviews with intelligent Catholics. The reason of this is, that I know better how to treat the latter in argument. Having been one myself, I know where the difficulties lie, how to appeal to their own minds, and how to lead them to correct conclu-

sions. Perhaps I can best convey my meaning to my readers, by giving a brief account of some of the interviews alluded to.

There is an interesting little girl whom I have repeatedly conversed with, (the daughter of an ignorant Catholic woman,) who has enjoyed some of the advantages of instruction in the scriptures, and submits with extreme reluctance to the ceremonies which her mother requires her to perform, in compliance with the requisitions of her priest. She believes my book, and she has reason for it. She has acknowledged to me, though with shame and reluctance, that, when compelled by her mother to confess to Father ***, in his private room, he has sat with his arms around her, and often kissed her, refusing money for the usual fee, on the plea that he never requires pay for confessing pretty girls. He told her the Virgin Mary would leave her if she told of it. His questions are much the same as I have heard. All this I can believe, and do believe. I need not say that I tremble for her fate.

During the first week in March, 1836, I received a visit at my lodgings in New York, from a young woman, of a Protestant family in this city, who had received a Roman Catholic education. She called, as I understood, at the urgent request of her mother, who was exceedingly distressed at her daughter's intention to enter a Canadian nunnery.

Part of our interview was in private; for she requested me to retire with her a little time, where we might be alone; and I found her intention was, by certain queries, to satisfy herself whether I had

y meaning to
at of some of

whom I have
hter of an ig-
joyed some of
the scriptures,
to the ceremo-
to perform, in
of her priest.
reason for it.
gh with shame
ed by her mo-
in his private
round her, and
or the usual fee,
pay for confess-
he Virgin Mary

His questions
l. All this I can
not say that I

rch, 1836, I re-
ew York, from a
nily in this city,
atholic education.
e urgent request
gly distressed at
a Canadian nun-

private; for she
little time, where
her intention was,
self whether I had

ever been a Roman Catholic. She inquired if I could tell any of the questions commonly asked of women in the confession box; and on my answering in the affirmative, she desired me to repeat some, which I did. This satisfied her on that point; and I soon became so far acquainted with the state of her mind, as to perceive that she was prepared to avoid the influence of every argument that I could use against the system to which she had become attached.

She confessed to me, that she had given five hundred dollars to the Cathedral, and a considerable sum to St. Joseph's Church, and that she had decided on entering a nunnery in Canada. I inquired why she did not enter one in the United States. To this she replied, that she had only one objection; her Confessor, Father Pies, having told her that he would by no means recommend the latter, and greatly preferred the former, because the priests had entire control over the Canadian nunneries, which they had not of those in the States. This, and some other parts of our conversation took place in the presence of other persons; and on hearing this declaration of the priest, the motive of which was to us so palpable, a lady present laughed outright.

While we were alone, on her expressing a doubt of the crimes I have charged upon the priests, I said, but you admit that they have said and done such and such things, (which I do not like to repeat.) She signified assent. Then, said I, how can you pretend that any thing is too bad for them to do? I also said, you admit that they have asked you in the Confession box, whether you

ever wished to commit bestiality. She replied, "Yes; but if we have not evil thoughts, there is no harm." "You admit that they have treated you with great familiarity at confession?" She replied, that she confessed to her priest while he sat in a chair, and that he had; "but," said she, "you know a priest is a holy man, and cannot sin." And when I pressed her with another question, she confessed that her priest had told her she could not be sanctified without having performed an act commonly called criminal, and replied in a similar manner.

She was ashamed or afraid to assert her full faith in some of the doctrines she had been taught, when I loudly and emphatically demanded of her, whether she did indeed credit them. This was the case with her in regard to the pardon of sins by priests, the existence of purgatory, or a middle place, &c. She spoke of these and other subjects as if she believed in them: but when I said, "Do you believe it really and truly?"—you do?" she invariably faltered and denied it.

She spoke of my "Disclosures" as untrue; and I got it out of her, that she had conversed with her priest about me at Confession, who assured her that I was not myself, not Maria Monk, but an evil spirit, in short, the devil in the form of a woman. After considerable conversation, she admitted that my book was undoubtedly true; but still she refused to do, as I told her she ought after saying what she had, come out and be a Protestant.

She informed me that her confessor had a great desire to see me, and inquired if I would consent to an interview. I replied, that I would readily

agr
but
me
from
tion
dist

Recoll
nery

WHIL
our ne
Duran
ed, and
was ab
had eve
had be
about a
the per
fession
her unc
pression
I had
attend
other n
Savage
anceau
to shoc
an unne
asional

agree to see him, in the presence of Dr. Brownlee, but not alone; and she went away without leaving me any reason to hope that she had been released from the power of superstition, or had any intention of gratifying her mother, who was so deeply distressed at the prospect of her daughter's ruin.

CHAPTER XII.

Recollections of my Noviciate in the Hotel Dieu Nunnery—Miss Duranceau.

WHILE I was a novice, there was a young lady of our number from the Tannery,* named Angelique Duranceau, with whom I was somewhat acquainted, and of whom I had a favourable opinion. She was about eighteen, and at the time of her entrance had every appearance of good health. After she had been there a considerable time, it might be about seven months, (as I know she was not near the period when she could make her general confession, that is, at the end of the first year,) I saw her under circumstances which made a strong impression on my mind.

I had received a summons from the Superior to attend in the Novices' sick-room, with several other novices. When I entered, I found Fathers Savage and Bonin reading a paper, and Miss Duranceau on a bed, with a look so peculiar as quite to shock me. Her complexion was dark, and of an unnatural colour, her look strange, and she occasionally started and conducted very singularly

* A village a few miles from Montreal.

indeed, though she never spoke. Her whole appearance was such as to make me think she had lost her reason, and almost terrified me. The Superior informed us that she wanted us as witnesses; and the priests then coming forward, presented the paper to Miss Duranceau, and asked her if she was willing to give all her property to the church. She replied with a feeble motion of the head and body, and then, having a pen put into her hands, wrote her name to it without reading it, and relapsed into apparent unconsciousness. We were then requested to add our signatures, which being done, we withdrew, as we entered, I believe, without the sick novice having had any knowledge of our presence, or of her own actions.

A few hours afterwards I was called to assist in laying out her corpse, which was the first intimation I had of her being dead. The Superior, myself, and one or two other novices, were the whole of this melancholy task to perform, being the only persons admitted into the apartment where the body lay. It was swelled very much. We placed it in a coffin, and screwed on the cover alone. On account of the rapid change taking place in the corpse, it was buried about twenty-four hours after death.

Not long after the burial, two brothers of Miss Duranceau came to the Convent, and were greatly distressed when told that she was dead. They complained of not being informed of her sickness; but the Superior assured them that it was at the urgent request of their sister, who was possessed of so much humility, that she thought herself unworthy of attracting the regard of any one, and no

fit to be lamented even by her nearest friends. "What was she," she had said, according to the declarations made by the Superior, "what was she that she should cause pain to her family?"

This was not the only occasion on which I was present at the laying out of the dead. I assisted in three other cases. Two of the subjects died of consumption, or some similar disease; one of whom was an old-country girl, and the other a squaw.—The latter seemed to fall away from the time when she came into the nunnery, until she was reduced almost to a shadow. She left to the Convent a large amount of money.

Several stories were told us at different times, of nuns who had gone into a state of sanctity in the Convent. One, who had excited much attention and wonder by prophesying, was at length found to be in such a condition, and was immediately released from the duty of observing the common rules of the Convent, as the Superior considered her authority over her as having in a manner ceased.

It was affirmed that many priests had been taken to heaven, body and soul, after death.

The following story I was told by some of the nuns and the Superior while I was a novice, and it made a considerable impression upon my mind.—After catechism one day, a dove appeared in the room while the nuns were kneeling and engaged in prayer. It addressed one of the nuns and the Superior, not only in an audible voice, but in a string of French rhymes, which were repeated to me so often that I learnt them almost all by heart, and retain several to this day.

"Un grand honneur je vous confere,
"Aussi a vous, la Superieure."

These were the first two lines. In the sequel the dove informed the audience that in eight days the spirit of the nun should be raised to heaven, to join its own, and that of other souls in that blessed place; and spoke of the honour thus to be conferred upon the nun, and on the Superior too, who had had the training of one to such a *grade* of holiness.

When the day thus designated arrived, a number of priests assembled, with the Superior, to witness her expected translation; and while they were all standing around her, she disappeared, her body and soul being taken off together to heaven. The windows had been previously fastened, yet these offered no obstacle, and she was seen rising upward like a column moving through the air. The sweetest music, as I was assured, accompanied her exit, and continued to sound the remainder of the day, with such charming and irresistible effect, that the usual occupations of the nuns were interrupted, and all joined in and sang in concert.

CHAPTER XIII

Story of Ann, the Scotch Novice—Letters of her lover—The Superior's deception—Miss Farnes—Ann's determination to leave the Convent—Means taken to persuade her to stay.

There was a young girl, named Ann, who was very stout and rather homely, but not of pleasing manners, though of a good disposition, seventeen or eighteen years of age, to whom I took a liking.

She was a novice with me, and the time of which I am to speak, was not long after I returned from St. Denis. The Superior also displayed a partiality for her, and I found she was much in favour of having her received as a nun, if it could be accomplished. She was very handy at different kinds of work; and, what I believe chiefly induced me to regard her with kindness, she was a fatherless and motherless child. She had a beau in town, who one day called to see her at the nunnery, when she was going to confession.

I was with the Superior at the time, who, on being informed that the young man was there, and of his errand, requested me to go into the parlour with her, to meet him. He put into the Superior's hands a parcel and three letters, requesting her to give them to Ann. She took them, with an expression of assent, and he withdrew. Just as he had gone, Ann came hurrying into the parlour, saying that some one had told her that the Superior had sent for her. The Superior rebuked her sharply, and sent her back, without, however, showing her what she had promised to give her. Ann said, that she had understood a young man (mentioning her visitor) had called to see her. This the Superior denied, telling her never to come till she was wanted.

When Ann had gone, the Superior told me to go with her to her room, which I did. She there first made me promise never to tell of what she was going to do, and then produced the letters and package, and began to open them. One of the letters, I remember, was folded in a singular manner, and fastened with three seals. In the parcel was

ere,
n the sequel
in eight days
to heaven, to
in that blessed
us to be con-
superior too, who
ch a {ade of

rrived, a num-
e Superior, to
and while they
isappeared, her
ther to heaven.
y fastened, yet
was seen rising
rough the air.
ed, accompanied
he remainder of
irresistible effect,
nuns were inter-
in concert.

ters of her lover-
rnes—Ann's deter-
eans taken to per-

d Ann, who was
t not of pleasing
osition, seventeen
n I took a liking.

found a miniature of the young man, a pair of ear rings, a breast pin, and something else, what, I have now forgotten. The letters were addressed to her by her lover, who advised her by all means to leave the Convent. He informed her that a cousin of hers, a tailor, had arrived from Scotland, who was in want of a housekeeper; and urged her to live with him, and never renounce the Protestant religion in which she had been brought up.

I was surprised that the Superior should do what I felt to be very wrong and despicable; but she represented it as perfectly justifiable on account of the good which she had in view.

I considered myself as bound to be particularly obedient to the Superior, in order that I might make my conduct correspond with the character given of me to her, by Miss Bousquier, who, as I have mentioned in the sequel of my first volume, had shown me an evidence of her friendship by recommending me to her, and becoming, in some sense, responsible for my good conduct to induce her to receive me back into the nunnery. This was a strong reason for my complying with the Superior's wish in the case of which I am speaking.

Since I have alluded here to the period of my return to the convent, I may remark that the Superior took some pains to ascertain, by her own inquiries, whether there was substantial reason for reliance on the favourable opinion expressed to her of me by Miss Bousquier. I recollect particularly her inquiring of me whom I had conversed with, while at St. Denis, to persuade them to enter the Black Nunnery for Miss Bousquier, I understood, had informed me that I had shown

my attachment to the Hotel Dieu, by making favourable representations of it while with her engaged in keeping school. To the Superior's inquiries I replied, that I had urged little Gueroutte to become a nun. She was the daughter of Jean Richard, as he was familiarly called, to distinguish him from a number of other men of nearly the same name: for he had extensive family connexions in that place. He lived opposite Miss Bousquier, so that I had had frequent opportunities to converse with his daughter.

But not to detain my readers longer on this digression, I will return to my story and poor Ann, the Scotch girl. Having received particular instructions from the Superior, I promised to endeavour to get into her confidence, for the purpose of influencing her to take the veil, and to proceed in accordance with the directions given me. The Superior told me by no means to make any approaches to her at once, nor indeed for some time, lest she should suspect our design; but to wait awhile, until she could have no reason to think my movements might have grown out of the circumstances above mentioned: for Ann appeared to be uncommonly penetrating, as the Superior remarked; and of course much caution was necessary in dealing with her. Some time subsequently, therefore, I cannot tell exactly how long, I engaged in conversation with her one day in the course of which she remarked that Miss Farns, a confidential friend of hers, who had spent a short time in the nunnery some time before, was soon coming back.

This Miss Farns had come in on trial, while I was in the Convent, and I had often heard the Su-

perior say, that she must be separated from Ann, because they were so much together, and so often breaking the rules. Ann now told me in confidence, that her friend was coming back, not with any real intention of staying, but only for the purpose of giving her some information favourable to herself, which she had obtained. This she wished to become fully possessed of before she would decide whether to leave the Convent or not.

All this I communicated to the Superior, who then began to look for Miss Farns' return, with a determination to treat her with every appearance of kindness. She often in the mean time, gave me little delicacies, with directions to share them with Ann. Miss Farns soon presented herself for re-admission, and was admitted without any difficulty, not being required even to change her dress. This occurred, as nearly as I can recollect, about six weeks after the affair of intercepting Ann's letters, mentioned a few pages back, and somewhere about the close of summer, or the beginning of autumn.

Being allowed to do pretty much as they chose, Ann and her friend were much together, and generally engaged in deep conversation : so that, as the Superior declared, it was evident they were forming some plan for secret operations. I tried several times to get near and overhear what they were talking about : but I could not learn any thing. The next day Miss Farns departed, saying she never intended to return ; which offended the Superior so much, that she said she would have the doors shut if she ever came again.

The same evening Ann requested me to tell the

Superior
she
perior
on the
former
would
and b
good
that sh
success
as she
creatur
content
to pur
stairs,
favour
same ti
and car
I acco
that sh
clothes,
In obed
senting
dence a
that he
the wor
told her
she ong
temptati
be bette
her influ
remained
ould no
because

and from Ann,
and so often
me in confi-
ack, not with
ly for the pur-
favourable to
his she wished
she would de-
er not.

Superior, who
return, with a
ery appearance
an time, gave
s to share them
nted herself for
thout any diffi-
ange her dress.
recollect, about
recepting Ann's
ack, and some-
mmer, or the

h as they chose,
gether, and gen-
on : so that, as
dent they were
ations I tried
hear what they
not learn any
s departed, say-
; which offend-
e said she would
ame again.
ed me to tell the

Superior, that she wished to get her clothes, that she might leave the Convent. I went to the Superior's room, where I found Father Bonin sitting on the sofa talking with her. When they were informed of Ann's message, the Superior said, she would let the girl go at once back to the world, and be given up to the devil. Bonin argued a good deal against this. The Superior replied, that she had set the old nuns at work, but without success ; they had not been able to influence Ann as she desired ; and it was a shame to keep such a creature within holy walls, to make the flock discontented. At length she decided on the course to pursue ; and turning to me, said : take her up stairs, give her her clothes, yet argue with her in favour of remaining in the Convent, but at the same time tell her, that I am indifferent about it, and care not whether she goes or stays.

I accordingly returned to Ann, and telling her that she might follow me up stairs and get her clothes, led the way, and delivered them to her. In obedience to my orders, I lost no time in representing her intentions to depart from our holy residence as an insinuation of the devil ; and told her that he was trying his best to draw her out into the world, that he might secure her for himself. I told her that he had a strong hold upon her, and she ought to use the greater exertions to resist his temptations ; that the Superior thought it might be better on the whole if she departed, because her influence might be very injurious to others if she remained ; yet that I felt a deep interest in her, and could not bear to have her perform her intention, because I well knew that her throwing off the holy

dress that she then wore, to take her former one, would be the first step towards damnation.

"You need not talk so to me," replied Ann, "you have done the same yourself." I told her that if I had, I had lived to regret it, and was glad to get back to the Convent again. After a while an old nun came up, called me aside, and said the Superior wished me to continue talking with Ann; and, in case I should prevail with her to remain, to make her go down and beg pardon for the scandal she had caused by her conduct, and ask to be taken back again into the flock of the good shepherd, as the Superior was often called.

Poor Ann at length began to listen to me; and I got her to repeat to me all that Miss Farns had said to her during her late short visit to the nunnery. The amount of it was, that if Ann would come out at dusk, and go to a particular house, she would find her relations waiting for her, who had arrived from Scotland—they were, if I mistake not, her brother and cousin. Having prevailed upon her to break her engagement to meet them, I soon persuaded her to go down stairs as a penitent, and there she humbly kneeled, and in the usual manner kissed the feet of the Superior, and all the novices, and begged and obtained a penance, which was to serve as an atonement for her offence. This was, to fast three mornings, ask forgiveness of all her companions on the same days, and perform acts of contrition.

That evening the Superior called me to tea in her own room, when I told her all that I had learnt from the confession of Ann, who I knew was fasting at the time. When the Superior un-

ders
spok
men
ing
again
under

An
and v
friend
after,
tained
of it
of lon
the Su
ed wit
some c

Ann
not pr
with h
tion w

Mis

THERE
Miss I
deep pe
the cau
ber bei
days.
had our
often h

derstood the plan proposed by Miss Farns, she spoke of her in very severe terms, and then commended me, saying that I ought to rejoice at having saved a soul from hell, but ought to guard against pride, as I had accomplished what I had undertaken only by the help of the Virgin Mary.

Ann continued to behave as she had promised, and we heard nothing more of any attempt by her friends to get her out of the nunnery. Not long after, however, she was taken sick, and I ascertained, from observation and inquiry, that the cause of it was her discontentment, as she complained of loneliness. I felt compassion for her, and told the Superior that I thought she ought to be treated with more leniency. She said she would get some of the old nuns to talk with her a little more.

Ann was received, in due time, as a nun. I was not present at the ceremony, but I afterwards met with her, and several times had a little conversation with her.

CHAPTER XIV.

Miss Ross—Our early acquaintance—Her request.

THERE WAS a girl whom I knew from a child, a Miss Ross, the recollection of whom gives me deep pain: for I know too well that I have been the cause of great misfortunes to her. I remember being with her at different times in my early days. After our family removed to Montreal, and had our residence in the Government House, we often had calls from persons of our acquaintance,

as many were fond of walking in the garden, or green, as we commonly called it.

Such of my readers as have visited that city will be likely to remember the place of our residence: for the Government House, of which my mother is still the keeper, is of very large size: (I have sometimes heard it spoken off as the most ancient in America.) It was said that the foundation stones of that and the old French church were laid on the same day, as recorded. The gateway is of stone, and it is furnished in a manner becoming the residence of the Governor of the Province. The garden and green are of great extent, and present fine walks and flowers; and as the former overlooks the esplanade, to which it is adjoining, it was a favourite resort on Sunday afternoons, when the troops are on parade.

Miss Ross, I recollect, one evening in particular, paid me a visit with a Miss Robinson; and we amused ourselves together in the green. Her mother lived a little out of the city, near the Lachine road. She was a Scotch lady, and possessed a large property. When Miss Ross grew up, she became attached to a young man of my acquaintance, and indeed a relation of my mother; but when it became known, she found her mother very much opposed to her wishes.

While I was a novice in the Hotel Dieu, Miss Ross came in as one; and we had frequent interviews together, as our acquaintance still continued, and indeed we had always been friends. She became informed of my design of taking the black veil—I presume I must have told her of it myself; and one day she told me, that she had sometimes

the garden, or
visited that city
ace of our resi-
e, of which my
ry large size: (I
off as the most
that the founda-
ench church were
l. The gateway
a manner becom-
of the Province.
at extent, and pre-
nd as the former
it is adjoining,
unday afternoons,

ening in particu-
Robinson; and we
green. Her mo-
near the Lachine
, and possessed a
s grew up, she be-
my acquaintance,
her; but when it
nother very much

Hotel Dieu, Miss
ad frequent inter-
nce still continued,
friends. She be-
taking the black
d her of it myself;
he had sometimes

thought of becoming a nun, but still felt but little inclination that way; yet she requested me to do her the favour to inform her how I was pleased with that mode of life, after I should have been in long enough to form an opinion. If I thought she would be happy as a nun, she desired I would frankly inform her; and if not—as I was acquainted with her disposition—that I would warn her against it. We often conversed on the subject afterwards; and it was repeated, and plainly understood between us, that I was to tell her the exact truth, as she would probably be guided entirely by my opinion in the course she would adopt.

I went through many preparatory steps before my admission, as I have mentioned in my first volume, took the veil, and passed through some of the scenes which I have before spoken of, before I ever particularly reverted to the request of Miss Ross, so far as I now can remember. One thing, however, I here stop to mention, which I omitted to say in my first volume, and which I might forget hereafter, viz:—that soon after my admission as a "Received," the Superior gave me the charge of her room, that of the old nuns, and the adjoining community-room; and thus kept me for about three months in a degree more separate from the other nuns, than I should otherwise have been. This brought me more into intercourse with the Superior, and in the same proportion made some other nuns regard me with jealousy: for some of them occasionally, in some way or other, would express dislike towards me. Perhaps this state of things the more disposed me to confide in the Superior.

After I had been a nun for some weeks, I cannot tell exactly how long, I recollect that as I lay awake one night, I began to think of Miss Ross, and to recall the conversations we had held together in the novices' apartment. All at once it occurred to me that I might probably do a great benefit to myself, an honour to the nunnery and to true religion, as well as save her, by inducing her to take the black veil, especially as she had so much property to add to the funds. At the same time the thought presented itself to my mind, that by so doing I should gain a very exalted place in heaven for myself: for I had already heard a great deal said, and had repeatedly read the same in our book, that to bring a person into a Convent, was one of the highest kinds of merit. I soon made up my mind to communicate to the Superior all I knew; for although I questioned at once whether it would not be shameful and sinful to betray the confidence of my friend, this was easily got over, by the thought of the vast benefits to result from it, especially to herself.

The next day I told one of the old nuns that I wished to speak to the Superior; for as this was commonly required, and nuns could not go into her room without leave, I conformed to custom. I was soon admitted, when I told her all Miss Ross had said to me, and added, that I wished to get her to take the veil. I apologized for my private conversations. She said they were perfectly justifiable.—I think I never saw the Superior express more satisfaction than she did on the receipt of this intelligence. She appeared overjoyed; listened to all I had to say with great attention, and

highly approved of my proposition. When I informed her of Miss Ross's attachment to young —, she replied that that might explain the state of her mind; for the old nuns had for some time spoken of her depressed appearance, and she had mentioned at confession that something lay very heavy on her mind.

The Superior appeared from that moment to devote her whole attention to the consideration of the subject. She seemed for a time almost lost in thought; and remarked to me, "We must consider this matter; we must consider the best way to bring her into the nunnery: for some persons are harder to get out of the devil's power than others. After a little time she told me I should be sent to read the lecture to the novices, and she would tell the old nuns to allow me to converse with Miss Ross, which they would not let me do, as I well knew, without her express orders, as it was contrary to the rules. She then told me many things to say to Miss Ross, and some of her instructions she repeated to me, so that I might not be at a loss when I should converse with her, no matter what objections she might raise.

Among other things which I most distinctly recollect, she told me to assure her, that as to the happiness of a Convent, no person could possibly be more happy than nuns; for there we were assured of the favour of God, and of heavenly enjoyments after death; that while in the world, other young women would draw us off from our duty, and occupy our minds with thoughts that would do us harm: there we were exposed to no such dangers. The sinfulness of vain thoughts might ap-

appear to us very trifling, but it was very different in the sight of God; and how could we hope to resist the temptations surrounding us in such a manner in the world? If she made any allusion to her attachment to the young man before mentioned, the Superior told me to declaim against it, as an abomination to think of such a thing in the nunnery; that I could not converse with her if she spoke of it again, as not a proper person. If she appeared to hesitate at my proposition, I was to tell her solemnly, that my offer was a direct invitation from Jesus Christ to become his spouse, which could not be rejected without great guilt.

The Superior told me that I should be richly rewarded if I succeeded. She thought I would soon be made an old (or confidential) nun: and she would give me a most precious relic, with a piece of the heart of Mary Magdalen, and intercede for me with the Virgin.

After I had listened attentively to all these instructions received from a woman to whom I looked with unbounded respect and veneration, I left her, prepared to put them into practice to the best of my ability, much excited with the hope of accomplishing what I thought a truly great and meritorious act, and one that would ensure the salvation of my friend.

The reader may perhaps here recall the disclosures I have heretofore made, of the crimes I had witnessed, and the sufferings I had undergone before this period of my convent life, and wonder how I could possibly have been so far deluded, as really to believe what I was thus prepared to say. Such, however, is indeed the truth; except the

I must allow, that my conscience repeatedly disturbed me, and seriously too, with the suggestion that I should be guilty of direct deception, if I said, either that I was happy in the Convent, or that I had at all times unshaken faith in any of the declarations I was about to make. More than once, too, I was shocked at the idea of deceiving my confiding young friend. But as I believed what I had been so often taught, about the virtue of deception, in certain circumstances, I did my best to smother my scruples.

The promised arrangements were made by the Superior; the old nuns were instructed not to interrupt any conversation they might witness between Miss Ross and myself, and I was directed, at the appointed hour, to read the lecture. I thus easily found the opportunity I sought, and was soon with Miss Ross, while the old nuns appeared very busy in another part of the room, and unobtrusive. Though under a repeated promise to reveal to her the state of my mind, now that I had been long familiar with the secrets of the nunnery, I most cautiously guarded myself, and assumed what did not belong to me—the appearance of one devotedly fond of the institution.

I told her that I had now been long enough a "Received" to be able to express an opinion; and must inform her that we lived a most happy life within the institution; that I would urge her, as a friend, to take the veil, and withdraw from that world which was so full of temptations. To this she lent a very serious ear; and I saw that my words produced a solemn and saddening effect upon her feelings. She replied that she felt quite

undecided what to do. She seemed solicitous to be still farther assured of the happiness I had spoken of as enjoyed by the nuns.

When she touched that subject, I addressed her exactly after the manner directed by the Superior, and speaking rather harshly, inquired of her, "Do you condemn the life of a nun then?" She instantly answered, "No;" and she easily admitted all I said about the attention paid to the comfort of those in the Convent. "But," said she, my mother is very much opposed to my taking the veil; she is a widow, and you know we are bound to honour and obey our parents—nature teaches us that." The Superior had furnished me, in French, with an answer to this objection; and as we were accustomed to converse in English, I had only to translate her words, which were,

"Les droits de nos parens ne sont pas devant les droits de notre religion."

"The claims of our parents are not before those of our religion."

"I shan't be a nun!" said she, with determination. I talked with her, however, some time, and she began again to listen patiently.

I then added, that Christ had commanded us to "forsake father and mother" to be his disciples, and that we must have trials and tribulations before we could enter the kingdom of heaven. She told me that she felt then less inclined to the world than she had when we had last conversed together; but at length she alluded to Mr.——. "Never mention," I exclaimed, "such abominations! It is sin, it is defilement to speak of such a thing in so holy a place as a convent." This I said very

much in the manner and tone which the Superior had used in dictating it to me. I then added, "Now this is the only obstacle which the devil puts in the way of your salvation—and see how he tries more to prevent you, the nearer you are getting to it. All that you have to do, then, is to resist the more."

And the repetition of these expressions, has brought to my mind many others which I often heard, not only about that time, but frequently before and afterwards. One brings up another; and to speak of objections that might be made to any of our nunnery doctrines, or to hear a question asked about our way of life, naturally calls to my memory the replies which were made to them.

"Are you at liberty to buy a farm, and sell it when you please? No—Then how can you give yourself to a young man when you please?"

"Must we not obey our parents?—Quand les droits de la religion sont concerne, les droits de la nature cessent."

["When the rights or claims of religion are concerned, the rights (or claims) of nature cease."]

When the question is put to an old nun—"What made you become a nun?" the regular, fixed answer always is, with a peculiar drawl—"Divine love." But such things as these, although they come up very strongly to my mind, may perhaps appear to be not worth mentioning.

The conversation I held with poor Miss Ross was much longer than I can undertake to give a full account of; but after I had over and over again painted the happiness of a nun's life in the brightest manner I was able, and assured her that

I had never known blessedness before I had entered upon it, I told her that I had had some inspirations from heaven, such as I had never enjoyed before, and that she would have the same. I also told her with solemnity, that she had now received, through me, an invitation from Jesus Christ, to become his bride; and that if she rejected it, it would be a sin of deep ingratitude, and he would reject her from the kingdom of heaven: that it was her duty to enter the Convent as a veiled nun, without regarding the feelings of her mother, or any other obstacle; and that she was bound to obtain all the property she could, and put it into the treasury of the institution.

CHAPTER XV.

Story of Miss Ross continued—Plan to get her into the Nunnery for life—Arrangements—Execution of our design.

It was very easy for me to see that what I said had a great effect on Miss Ross. I found it impossible however, to make her promise me to take the veil. She persisted that she must see her mother first. I then left her, and went to the Superior's room, where I informed her of all that had passed. She appeared very much delighted, and treated me with great condescension and kindness. She said, however, that we should yet have to do much; for it was plain to her that the novice had very strong scruples to overcome—and she added, that the devil's influence was very powerful over some persons. We must therefore pursue a plan which

I had entered some inspiration, ever enjoyed same. I also now received, Christ, to be rejected it, it and he would have: that it as a veiled nun, her mother, or was bound to and put it into

get her into the execution of our

what I said had and it impossible to take the veil. I mother first. I Superior's room, and passed. She treated me with ss. She said, to do much; for had very strong added, that the l over some per- a plan which

would require great caution and skill on our part, but which, she had no doubt, would prove successful. This she communicated to me in a few words. That evening the Superior told the nuns that she had been warned in a dream that some one was in great temptations, and desired them to say a Pater and an Ave for her.

We were to disguise ourselves, and appear to Miss Ross, I as Satan, and she as the Holy Mother. Miss Ross must be brought alone, and with solemnity, to some place where we could carry through the deception without interruption, and with the best effect. The whole of her plan she communicated to me; but as we had several rehearsals to go through in preparation, instead of repeating her instructions, I had better relate what was done in conformity with them.

When we were prepared to go through with our parts, in order that we might become familiar with them, she gave me an old robe, which she made me wrap around me, and the devil's cap, head, and horns, which is kept to scare the nuns, few of whom know of it. Thus I was concealed, every thing except my eyes, and then approached a spot where we imagined the novice to be lying. I addressed her in a feigned voice, and invited her to become my servant, promising her a happy and easy life. In an instant, at a moment when we supposed her to be making a sign of the cross, I stopped speaking, and hastily withdrew. After a short time, I returned, and made other propositions to her: and then, after flying again from the cross again came back, and promised her, in case she would comply, to ensure her marriage with the

man she loved. I then retired once more; after which, the Superior approached, and with as sweet and winning a voice as she could assume, said that she had listened to what had passed, and had come to assure her of her protection.

After I had become familiar with my part in this sad farce, and acted it to the satisfaction of the Superior, she took measures to have it performed for the last time. In this also I had a principal part to perform: for I was directed to hold another conversation with my deceived friend; and, in obedience to instructions, on Saturday evening took her into the Examination of Conscience room, and informed her, that I had been inspired by the Virgin Mary to tell her, that if she would go into the nuns' private chapel, the Holy Mother would speak with her. I informed her, however, that it would not be at all surprising if the devil should appear to her, and endeavour to prevent her from holding so happy an interview; and that if she should be tempted, she must cross herself, and Satan would instantly leave her, because he could not withstand the power of the sign. Then telling her that she must keep a strict fast on Sunday evening, I informed her, that on Monday morning I would be with her again.

In the mean time, the Superior, with the help of one of the old nuns, Saint Margarite, and myself, had darkened the private chapel as much as we could, by means of black curtains, and placed only a single light in it, and that a taper, burning by the side of the altar. We also took down the cross, and laid it on the floor, with the head turned towards the door, and the foot towards the altar. When all

e more; after
l with as sweet
ume, said that
and had come

my part in this
satisfaction of the
e it performed
had a principal
d to hold ano-
d friend; and,
aturday evening
onscience room,
inspired by the
would go into
Mother would
however, that it
the devil should
revent her from
and that if she
loss herself, and
because he could
n. Then telling
fast on Sunday
Monday morning

, with the help of
rite, and myself,
as much as we
, and placed only
aper, burning by
ok down the cross,
ad turned towards
e altar. When all

was prepared, I went to Miss Ross, and conducted her into the chapel. I told her to lie down upon the cross, with her arms extended, in the attitude of the crucified Saviour, which she did; and then bound her eyes tight with a bandage, all just as the Superior had ordered, telling her she might otherwise see a horrid sight. I then retired by the door, just outside of which, the Superior was standing; and there I was covered with the old robe; for although it was so dark, the eyes of the poor girl were blinded, and her head purposely so placed, that she could hardly have seen us under any circumstances, yet the Superior said, perhaps she might peep a little and see us. If this plan failed, she said, she must resort to some other.

We were both completely disguised; and I had not only the dress on, and devil's cap, but a slice cut from a potato, and slit in different ways so as to resemble great teeth, which was crowded into my mouth. The front part of my cap had been turned up inside, and I painted my cheeks with some red paint the Superior gave me; and she afterwards put on more paint, thinking I had not enough.

After I had left Miss Ross in the chapel about a quarter of an hour, the Superior signified that it was time to return, and begin my temptation. I therefore approached her, and standing a little distance from her head, repeated some of the words I had been taught; and the circumstances are still most distinctly before me, so that I remember the words as if I had uttered them only yesterday. Perhaps one reason of it is, that every few minutes during the whole time, my conscience stung me severely, so that I could scarcely go on with my part.

"Are you a fool," said I, "to be lying there in such a posture, for that God of yours? Had you not better serve me?" She raised her hand, without speaking, and made the sign of the cross, saying, "Jesu, Maria, Joseph, ayez pitie de moi." (Jesus, Mary, Joseph, have pity on me!) I waited no longer, but immediately retired softly, as if I had vanished. After standing a few minutes beside the Superior, just outside of the door, without either of us speaking, she touched me, and I approached the poor novice again.

"Would you not like to come out of this place," I asked her, "and serve me? You shall have nothing but balls and pleasure of all kinds." Miss Ross made the sign of the cross again, and I vanished as quickly and silently as before. In a short time I entered again, and told her, if you will only leave this nunnery, I will do any thing for you you wish—I will get you married to the young man you love so much."

Still the poor unsuspecting girl, though doubtless terrified, made the sign of the cross again and again; and at length I left her saying "Jesu, Maria, Joseph, ayez pitie de moi." I then took off my dress, when the Superior made me sit down, and signified that I must not make the slightest noise. She remarked, 'Well, if this plan does not succeed, I will try force.' She then went in and addressed her, in French, in this manner:

"I am your Holy Mother, (which means the Virgin Mary,) I have been listening to your faithfulness, and will adopt you as one of my children. Are you willing to become one of my daughters? If you are, you must join the sisters this week, and

make your vows before another Sabbath passes over your head; for I am afraid the devil is making great plans to get you. But if you have your vows made, I think you will be safe."

She then asked her if she was willing to give up all she had to the Holy Church, and told her, that unless she would part with all, she could not accept her. She then promised her her protection, if she was willing, and retired saying, "Peace be with you."

In the afternoon I was sent to request her to go into the Superior's room, as she wished to speak with her. On entering it, we found the Superior of the Convent and the Superior of the Seminary both there. The former addressed her, telling her that she had had a vision, in which she was told that the young novice who was doing penance in the chapel, was acceptable in the sight of God. At this, Miss Ross appeared quite overjoyed, but scarcely able to speak.

The Superior then told her, that she ought to listen to any advice I might give her, for she had entire confidence in me, and she ought to be guided by my counsel. She requested her to return to the novices' department, retire into a corner, and determine what she would do. She then whispered to me, and desired me to remain with her until the Superior of the Seminary went away, which I did. She then told me to go to Miss Ross again, and coax her to be received almost immediately.

I went accordingly, and endeavoured to get a promise from her to that effect, but I was unable. She persisted that she must see her mother before she could take the veil. I inquired of her the rea-

son. She replied, that she wished to give to the nunnery all the property her mother could spare her. This I communicated to the Superior, who told me to say that her mother should be sent for the next day. Her mother came, and had an interview with her, in which she learnt her daughter's intention to become a nun. This she opposed to her utmost; but all the arguments and entreaties she used, were utterly vain—she could make no impression. Her daughter had wished to see her only to tell her that such was her resolution, and to request her to deliver her that afternoon, all the money she intended ever to give her. The widow retired—the money was sent—Miss Ross took the veil on the Wednesday morning following, and brought a large contribution. I was not present at her reception; and I do not think it necessary to say any thing further on a subject, which is, and ever must be, all my life, one of the most painful with which I have had any connexion. I will only add, that although I often saw Saint Mary, (as she was called, after her supposed patroness,) I never spoke with her after her reception. Opportunities, it is true, were not very frequent; but, when they were offered, she repeatedly seemed disposed to speak to me. I saw, at length, that she was becoming a favourite with Jane Ray, which pleased me, knowing that she would be of some service to her, and befriend her. Many a time she would fix her eyes upon me, and it seemed as if they would pierce through my soul.

CHAPTER XVI

More recollections of Jane Ray—Her confessions of her history.

d to give to the
other could spare
e Superior, who
ould be sent for
, and had an in-
earnt her daugh-
This she opposed
ents and entrea-
—she could make
ad wished to see
as her resolution,
that afternoon, all
o give her. The
sent—Miss Ross
morning following,
. I was not pre-
not think it neces-
a subject, which
one of the most
ny connexion. I
I often saw Saint
her supposed pa-
r after her recep-
were not very fre-
red, she repeatedly
I saw, at length,
te with Jane Ray,
she would be of
end her. Many a
me, and it seemed
my soul.

One of the nuns was from St. Mark's, and bore the name of St. Mark. Her father visited the Superior one day, and requested her to have the nuns pray for him daily for a short time, leaving with her a considerable sum of money to pay for their intercession. Such things were occasionally done by different persons. He also sent about forty dollars to his daughter, with a desire that they might be distributed among the nuns, to purchase whatever they might wish for. The Superior informed us that it was quite inconsistent with the rules of the nuns to receive such presents, but that, considering the devout character of the giver, she would not entirely forbid the execution of his request. She therefore furnished us with some molasses to make into candy, and allowed us an unusual degree of liberty during a part of a day. A considerable quantity of molasses was made into candy by some of the most skilled in the process: though by no means as much as forty dollars' worth. The Superior, however, had a trick played on her in consequence of the indulgence: for some of us attributed it to a desire of pleasing the rich contributor, and not to any kindness towards ourselves.

When the time for evening prayers had almost arrived, Jane Ray proposed to drop a little warm candy in the chairs of the Superior and two old nuns. This was soon done; and in a few min-

utes those seats, as well as the others in the community room, were occupied, and the prayers going on. At the close the Superior attempted to rise, but fell back again into her chair; and at the same moment the two old nuns did the same. After a few unsuccessful attempts, their situation became evident to all the assembly; and there was a great embarrassment at once among us all, arising from a disposition to speak and to laugh, opposed by the endeavour to suppress both. The scene was a very ludicrous one, and Jane enjoyed much amusement before the Superior and the old nuns could be set at liberty.

Jane Ray would sometimes seem to be overcome and lose courage, when detected and exposed for some of her tricks, even though not condemned to any severe penance. I have seen her cry, and even roar, after committing some breach of rules and then retire to a corner, and after composing herself, begin to meditate a new trick. This she would commonly carry into effect with success and then laughing aloud, declare that she was satisfied and happy again.

Sometimes she would submit to penances with perfect indifference, though they made her the constant object of observation. To punish her for her habitual negligence in dress, she was once ordered to wear an old nightcap until it fell to pieces but still she was seen again as usual, with her apron half on and half off, and with stockings of different colours.

She would occasionally slip into the Superior's room, steal pass tickets, and get into the hospital with them; and this she did so boldly, that she

others in the com
and the prayers go
Superior attempted to
her chair; and a
nuns did the same
pts, their situation
bly; and there was
among us all, aris
and to laugh, op
ppress both. The
, and Jane enjoyed
Superior and the ol

seem to be overcome
ed and exposed for
h not condemned to
e seen her cry, and
me breach of rules
and after composing
ew trick. This she
effect with success
re that she was satis

it to penances with
they made her th
To punish her for
ss, she was once o
until it fell to pieces
as usual, with her
d with stockings o

into the Superior
get into the hospita
so boldly, that she

was the occasion of the tickets being disused. Sometimes she would bring a Roman Catholic newspaper out of the Superior's room, and give it to the nuns to read; and sometimes repeat to us what she had overheard said in private.

Sometimes scenes of great agitation would occur, and things would be carried to such a state, that one and another of the nuns would become desperate, and resist with violence. For it is to be remembered, that unspeakable practices were sometimes resorted to, at the will of the priests or bishops, countenanced by the Superior; and sometimes, as I have stated in my first volume, required on the authority of the Pope.

Jane Ray sometimes appeared as a loud and violent opposer of what were considered the established rules of the Convent. She would break out in denunciations of the priests, and berate them in a style which it would be difficult to imitate, if it were worth while. Other nuns would sometimes exclaim, "Are you not ashamed to show so little respect for the holy fathers?" "Why are they not ashamed," she would reply, "to show no respect for the holy sisters?"

Some of the best opportunities I ever had for conversing with Jane, were at night; for during a considerable time she had her bed opposite mine, and by watching for a moment, when she could do without being seen by the night watch, she would slip over to me, and get into my bed. Thus we have often spent hours together, and she found such occasions very convenient for communicating some such plans as she devised for amusement or revenge. I sometimes lent an ear to her propo-

sals, quite against my will ; for I commonly concluded with a solemn confession of the wickedness, as I supposed it, in which she thus induced, and sometimes almost compelled me to engage. Indeed, it often happened that I had nothing to do in the morning, as it were, but to beg pardon ; and when I was asked why I had so much of that business to do, I commonly laid it to Jane Ray. She, however, appeared to take much pleasure in the stolen interviews we thus had ; and when we were obliged to lie at a distance from each other, she told me that it caused her to weep more than she had ever done in her life.

I naturally felt much curiosity to learn something of the history of Jane Ray, and repeatedly asked her questions intended to lead her to tell me something of her family, her former residence, or life. But, although so communicative on most other subjects, on this she evidently did not like to speak. Repeatedly have I known her to waive my inquiries, and many times, also, when I spoke very plainly, she would become silent, and refuse to speak a word. All this unwillingness, only served to increase my desire to know the truth, but I never was able to draw from her any thing more than a very brief and general account of herself ; for never, except on a single occasion, did she comply with my wishes so far as even to speak on the subject.

One night, when she had secretly left her bed and entered mine, she happened to be in a very communicative mood, though she appeared more depressed and deeply sunk in melancholy than I had ever known her before. She then informed

I commonly con-
of the wickedness,
thus induced, and
to engage. Indeed,
ning to do in the
ardon; and when
of that business to
Ray. She, how-
asure in the stolen
en we were obliged
other, she told me
than she had ever

sity to learn some-
ay, and repeatedly
o lead her to tell me
former residence, or
nunicative on most
dently did not like
known her to waive
also, when I spoke
e silent, and refus-
unwillingness, only
o know the truth, but
her any thing more
account of herself;
e occasion, did she
as even to speak on

secretly left her be-
ned to be in a very
she appeared more
a melancholy than
She then informed

me, that she had become attached to an officer of the British army in Quebec, in whom she confided to her ruin, believing that he intended to marry her. She left her parents, and after a time proceeded with him to Montreal. There he invited her to visit the Hotel Dieu Nunnery, as a curiosity; but to her surprise, she suddenly found herself deserted by him, and the doors closed upon her. From what she observed or heard, she soon learnt that this was done in consequence of an arrangement made between the officer and the Superiors of the Seminary and Convent, the first having paid a large sum of money to have her shut up from the world.

I understood her to say that the officer was an aid-de-camp of the former governor of Canada, Sir Peregrine Maitland. The priests, she believed, knew her story, but few of the nuns, she thought, had any knowledge of it except myself.

CHAPTER XVII.

My fear of the priests—Arguments used to keep us in subjection—Old nuns.

was kept in great fear of the priests, by pretences they made to various kinds of power. I was once confessing to Father Bedar, who is now dead, and told him I had something on my conscience which I did not like to communicate. He said to me, "I have power to strike you dead this minute, but I will not. I will spare you. Go and examine your conscience, and see if you cannot come back and tell me what it is that you now conceal."

I was much frightened ; for I believed what he said, and supposed he could have taken away my life on the spot by only wishing it. I therefore immediately went to the examination of my conscience with fear and trembling.

I have remarked in my first volume, more than once, that we were told it was a duty to submit to the licentious wishes of the priests. This we were urged to on various considerations. We were told, for instance, that being consecrated to God, we were not our own, and even our persons were not to be regarded as at our disposal. Out of considerations of gratitude, too, we were told, it was our duty to suppress the doubts and misgivings which would sometimes arise in our minds, when we allowed our consciences to present the nature of our life in its own proper light. If there were no priests, we were reminded we could never get to heaven ; and it would be ungrateful in the extreme, after being insured of eternal life by their kind offices, if we should deny them any wish whatever.

In spite, however, of all that was said, our feelings often revolted, and arguments were renewed. Not only so, but now and then, as I have before remarked, penances of different kinds were often resorted to, to suppress them.

One of the tales told us by the priests, was this—intended to prove the power they exercise by means of sacraments which none but they can administer. I recollect that it was recounted to us one day at catechism, by one of the fathers.

“I was once travelling,” said he, “in a desolate region, when I saw something flying like a white dove. Believing it to be the Holy Spirit, I follow

ed it, and it led me to a house, over the door of which it stopped. I went in, and found an old man on his death-bed, who had never been baptized, nor ever heard of any religion. I baptized him; and he went off straight to heaven."*

* Among my early recollections, are many anecdotes illustrating the peculiar opinions and ceremonies of the Canadian Catholics in and about Montreal. My grandmother, Mrs. Mills, was a Scotch woman, and a firm Protestant. She had a handsome estate about four miles distant from the city, on the Lachine road, where I repeatedly visited her. She was required, like everybody else in the parish who was able, to furnish, in her turn, what is called "holy bread," which is given out in church by the priest before sacrament, but eaten afterwards. The preparation of it was attended with much trouble and some expense; for there were to be eleven loaves made, of different sizes, though they were all of considerable weight. They were made with a good supply of eggs and butter, and took about a bag of flour. They were ornamented on the top with Peter's cock crowing, having on his head a tinsel crown, and were starred over, in a particular manner, which required great painstaking, and often cost many trials before they would be done right. My grandmother used to say that it always cost her ten or twelve dollars to prepare the holy bread; and the sacrifice of her feelings appeared to be still more reluctantly submitted to; for she called it, in her broad Scotch dialect, a service to the *Deevil*.

She was a regular devout attendant on public worship; notwithstanding her advanced age (above eighty) and the distance from her church, in Montreal, she seldom or never failed to attend, although in consequence of certain unhappy circumstances in her family, she could not for some years command the services of the horses in the barn, and always had to walk. I have lately conversed with a Protestant clergyman residing in Canada, who spoke in high terms of my grandmother, and said he had often overtaken her on the road home from church in the snow, and taken her up in his sleigh.

After her death, the Roman Catholics dwelling in her

One reason why I did not like to approach the cells occupied by the imprisoned nuns, was this: the Superior had told me that they were possessed by evil spirits, and that I must always make the sign of the cross on going into the cellar.

neighbourhood held her memory in great dislike, and were not allowed to pass over any part of her farm unless they had holy water about them, for fear of being beset by evil spirits.

A man I knew, whose name it is not necessary to mention, the son of a Protestant mother, wished to marry a Catholic woman, but knew he would be disinherited if he did so before she disposed of her property. The priest allowed them to live together as man and wife, with the intention to be married at a future time. When the neighbours began to talk about them, the priest gave the woman permission to turn Protestant for a time, and to be married by a Protestant Clergyman, which was done by Mr. Black. After the death of her mother-in-law, she threw off all disguise and avowed her Catholic sentiments again.

As this worthy couple lived in the house of the parent, in accordance with custom, they had to have the house blessed by a priest, before it was thought to be proper or safe to inhabit it. Accordingly the ceremony was performed, of driving out the devils; and a considerable sum of money was paid to the priest, I believe about a dollar for each window in the house. The man (who appeared to have no real principle) had a priest on his farm as many as seven or eight times to my knowledge, to bless his ground, and to secure his crops from insects; for some of his neighbours had persuaded him that it had been cursed in particular spots where a Protestant minister had trodden, when he visited it during the life of his mother, so that it was unfit to produce the priest's blessed grain.

The ceremony of blessing ground and seeds is one very commonly practised in those places in Canada, where I have been. Before a farmer plants, he takes a handful of seed to his priest, who blesses it, before it is fit to grow; and receives a sum of money for it, commonly,

to approach the
d nuns, was this :
they were possessed
t always make the
the cellar.

in great dislike, and
part of her farm unless
for fear of being beset

s not necessary to men-
er, wished to marry a
ould be disinherited if
er property. The priest
man and wife, with the
uture time. When the
them, the priest gave the
estant for a time, and to
gyman, which was done
of her mother-in-law, she
d her Catholic sentiments

the house of the parent,
y had to have the house
thought to be proper or safe
ceremony was performed,
a considerable sum of mo-
believe about a dollar for
ne man (who appeared to
riest on his farm as many
y knowledge, to bless his
ps from insects; for some
ded him that it had been
ere a Protestant minister
d it during the life of his
produce the priest's bless-

round and seeds is one very
places in Canada, where
plants, he takes a handful
asses it, before it is fit to
money for it, commonly,

There are seven sins, as we were taught, which
priests cannot forgive, viz : that of refusing to pay
tythes to the church, injuring dumb animals, set-
ting a house on fire, hearing a Protestant preach,
reading Protestant books, and one more which I
do not remember. These, however, can be for-
given by the Bishop or the Grand Vicar.

From what I heard and observed at different
times, I had reason to believe that a serious mis-
understanding existed between the Bishop and
Father Richards. I heard it hinted, in some way,
that the former would probably have had his resi-
dence in the nunnery but for the latter. But this
I state only as what I have been told.

The term "old nun," I did not particularly ex-
plain in my first edition. It did not refer entirely
to age. None of the nuns, indeed, were old wo-
men. For some reason or other, none of them ap-
peared to me to be above forty years of age and few
more than thirty. I never knew what made the
difference between them and the common veiled
nuns, like myself. It was easy to see that they
stood on a different footing from the rest of us, but
what that footing was I never could thoroughly
understand. They had a separate sleeping room,

believe, as many shillings as there are grains. These are
to be mixed with the rest of the seed before sowing, and
then you are sure of a good crop.—At sowing time the
priests have often a good deal to do in this way, and re-
ceive much money. The farmers often pay them in grain
instead of money, which is commonly the best that is to
be had. I know that an uncle of mine commonly bought
his seed wheat at the Seminary, because it was the best
he could obtain. The priests have in this way a good
deal of trade and barter to carry on, as is well known in
and about Montreal.

which I have described, and exercised much authority, not merely in overseeing and directing operations in the nuns' and novices' departments, but were allowed to inflict various punishments without consulting the Superior, and sometimes did punish with great severity.

I sometimes imagined that there might be some formal introduction to the dignity and authority of an Old Nun, and that a higher grade existed, above that of the "Received." It has occurred to me as quite possible, (from what I knew of the difference between novices and veiled nuns,) that "Old Nuns" might have taken some peculiar oaths, and submitted to rules of a special nature. All this, however, I inferred only from their conduct, and the concert and understanding which they appeared to have with each other and the Superior. No further light could I obtain on the subject; and I am still as much in the dark as ever, although the Superior once gave me much encouragement to hope that I should become an "Old Nun."

Some of that class, as I began to say, were far from being old; and indeed a number of them were below thirty years of age, according to my judgment. As for their real names, families, or personal history, I knew as little of them as others. We called them, familiarly, Ma Mere (my mother) or Ma Tante, (my aunt), and commonly obeyed them without delay when they laid their commands upon us.

I have no doubt, that, whatever was the process by which "Old Nuns" are made, the reason of the elevation of a "Received" to that dignity, is her superior cunning. It was in consequence of my

success at imposture, that the Superior told me she hoped I might become one; and the old nuns whom I best knew, were among the greatest adepts at duplicity I ever saw.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Shaving the hair in the Nunnery—Disputes about money
A Nun admitted for money—Influence of jealousy.

AMONG the practices in the nunnery, is that of shaving the hair of the nuns on their admission—This is done to most, but not all; as the hair of some is more easily disposed in a manner thought necessary to the proper arrangement of the head-band and veil. My hair was shaved on my reception, and frequently afterwards. At the time of my escape from the convent, it was very short; since when it has been growing, and it is now about six inches long. We used sometimes to shave each other's heads, and I have done it for other nuns.

It is a rule, that no novice shall be received who is not in sound health. Miss Louisa Bousquier, of St. Denis, owed her escape from the life of a nun to an affection of the head, on account of which she was discharged from her noviciate when within about three months of the period when she would have taken the veil.

Sometimes the priest would come to the Superior to borrow money of her, when she would show liberality towards some, but others I have heard her blame for not paying what they already owed

her. In several instances I knew difficulties to arise from money affairs.

One day I heard a conversation between the Bishop and the Superior of the Seminary about a quantity of plate which an old lady, on her decease, had bequeathed to the church. The Superior wished to appropriate it to the expenses of the Seminary, but the Bishop claimed it as his own. He said he wanted a set of plate and would have it sent to his house for his own use. The Superior replied, that he could do that as soon as he had paid the price which he could get for it at the silversmith's. The Bishop asked him if he knew whom he was talking to; and things seemed likely to rise to some height, when I left the room.

I heard a conversation, soon after my admission as a nun, between the Bishop and the Superior of the nunnery, in her room. The Bishop was complaining that he could not get his proper dues from the priests; for, as I understood, each priest is required to pay two English shillings out of every dollar he receives, for his support in the Seminary; while the whole of the profits of every high mass for the dead, is considered the property of the Seminary. The Superior of the nunnery replied, that the priests would be better able to pay all their debts if they did not gamble so much; and the state of the country at that time was unfavourable, and little money was to be had. The Bishop said he must preach a sermon to the people, to make them more liberal in their contributions.

I saw a nun one day whose appearance struck me in a singular manner. She was conducting a priest through the sewing room, and had a large

difficulties to
 n between the
 binary about a
 on her decease,
 The Superior
 xpenses of the
 it as his own,
 and would have
 se. The Supe-
 as soon as he
 get for it at the
 him if he knew
 things seemed
 I left the room.
 er my admission
 the Superior of
 Bishop was com-
 proper dues from
 l, each priest is
 ings out of every
 in the Seminary;
 every high mass
 perty of the Sem-
 nery replied, that
 to pay all their
 much; and the
 was unfavourable,
 The Bishop said
 people, to make
 utions.
 appearance struck
 was conducting a
 and had a large

bunch of keys, like an old nun. I could hardly tell what to think when I looked on her. It seemed as if I must have seen her before, and yet I could not remember when or where; and I had an impression that she could not be a nun. For some reason or other which I could not understand, I felt a great anxiety to know something about her, and inquired of Jane Ray, but she could tell me but little or nothing. I then asked leave of the Superior to speak with Sainte Thomas,—for that I understood was her name.—She consented, on condition that we should converse in her presence. I accordingly addressed her; but, much to my mortification and surprise, she replied very coldly, and showed at first no disposition to interchange more than a salutation with me. She soon, however, took an opportunity to write something on a bit of paper with a pencil, and to slip it into my hand, which I eagerly read as soon as I could safely do so; and there I found an explanation of her conduct. She intimated that she was unwilling to confide in the Superior, but wished to see me alone the first opportunity.

We soon after had a secret interview, for one night she stole into my bed, and we lay and talked together. She then appeared quite unreserved, and perfectly cordial, and repeated that she believed the Superior was only a spy over us. We soon found that we had been acquaintances in former years, and had been in the Congregational Nunnery together, but after her leaving it, I had met her twice in the street, and heard of her from some one; her family being so wealthy, we had no intercourse in society. She was from a place be-



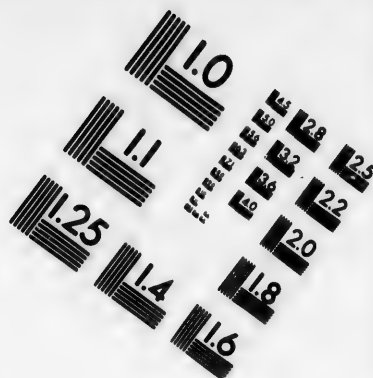
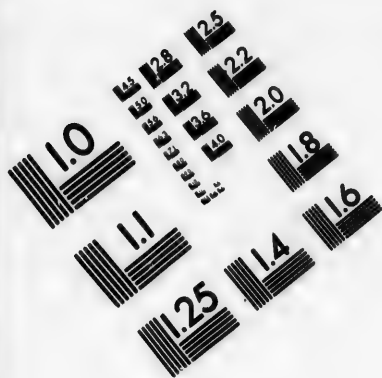
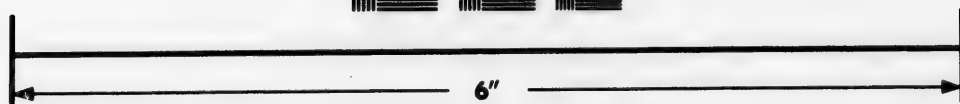
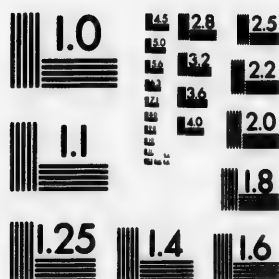


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

18
20
22
25
28
32
36
40
45
50
56
63
71
80
90
100

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100

hind the mountain, where her father, I believe, was a grocer, and a man of wealth. She had an uncle McDonald.

I learnt from her the circumstances under which she entered the nunnery; and they were peculiar. She had not passed a noviciate, but had purchased her admission without such preparation, by the paying of a large sum of money, as she had peculiar reasons for wishing for it.

My restless anxiety was thus in a degree relieved, for I found that my impressions were right, and that St. Thomas was not a nun in the common meaning of the word; but, on the other hand, I found I had been deceived in believing that all admitted into the Convent, had to pass through the same long trial and training to which I had been subject.

The state of things in the nunnery cannot be fully understood, without a knowledge of the fact, that much jealousy always exists between some of the nuns, on account of their preferences for particular priests. And yet a priest once told me, that there was more wrangling done in the Seminary about nuns, than any thing else.

Saint Clotilde died while I was there, of a natural death; and I heard one of the other nuns say she was glad of it, because she had drawn off the affections of a priest from her. The priests often bring in little delicacies into the nunnery for their favourites, such as fruit, confectionary, &c., and give them without the Superior's knowledge; and sometimes make them much more valuable presents.

There was a nun who entertained a very bitter

spirit towards
cross, disagree
She would som
while employee
work which rec
silence stand up
speak and get a
the Superior, th
in the nunnery
the voice of som
though this was
I might have so
tenced me to the
—vis: to live on
This diet appear
suffered more se
ing posture at pr
ly distressing to
ate, so that I wo
lie as live.

C
manners of the Can
by some of the Pr
her visit to a Queb
—Sister Turcot.

men priests who a
lly very clowni
quite brutish in
sometimes laugh a
me country paris
bread in his han

spirit towards me. This was Sainte Jane; and a cross, disagreeable creature she was as I ever saw. She would sometimes get close by me on purpose, while employed in ironing, or some other kind of work which required us to be up, and in time of silence stand upon my feet, in order to make me speak and get a penance. She once complained to the Superior, that she saw me looking from a place in the nunnery which she mentioned, and heard the voice of some person speaking with me. Although this was utterly false, the Superior thought I might have some intention of escaping, and sentenced me to the most severe penance I ever endured—viz: to live on bread and water for three weeks. This diet appeared to reduce my strength; and I suffered more severely than usual from the kneeling posture at prayers, which was always peculiarly distressing to me, and made me almost desperate, so that I would sometimes almost as readily die as live.

CHAPTER XIX.

Manners of the Canadian Priests—Confessions of crimes by some of the Priests—Story told by Aunt Susan of her visit to a Quebec Nunnery—Nuns in Priests' dresses—Sister Turcot.

The priests who are natives of Canada, are generally very clownish in their manners, and often quite brutish in their vices. The nuns would sometimes laugh at seeing a Canadian priest from some country parish, coming in with a large piece of bread in his hand, eating it as he walked. A

large proportion of the priests are foreigners ; and a constant intercourse appears to be kept up with France, as we often heard of such and such a father just arrived from that country. These are decidedly the worst class. Most of the wickedness of which I have any knowledge, I consider as their work. If I should repeat one half of the stories of wickedness I have heard from the mouths of some of the priests, I am afraid they would hardly be believed ; and yet I feel bound, since I have undertaken to make disclosures, not to omit them altogether.

It is not uncommon for priests to recount anecdotes of what they have seen and done ; and several stories which I have heard from some of them I will briefly repeat.

A country priest said one day, that he knew a priest in a parish better off than those of the Seminary, for he had seven nuns all to himself.

A priest said to me one day, that he had three daughters in Montreal, grown up. Their mother was a married woman. One of the daughters, he added, now occasionally confessed to him, ignorant, however, of any relationship.

Another said he was once applied to by a man for advice, in consequence of suspicions he had of his wife, and quieted his suspicions by telling him a falsehood, when he knew the husband was really jealous without cause, he himself having been a seducer.

It may, it must offend the ear of the modest to hear such exposures as these, even if made in the most brief and guarded language that can be used. But I am compelled to declare, that this is not a

I shall stop here
that it is because
he said, I must
that there are c
Nunnery too ab
I remember a
cession, which I
by priests ; who
indicative when in
topics is Confes
watch, one day,
dollars. He had
allow who had s
se it safely resto
on was to get it
he did, and boast
I have known p
they had done in t
ours at a time ;
er instructions h
might do. On
ty dollars, to tell
a young woman
what he called
est another to se
him, either on a
ty, for considera
ned from the ric
In the country th
now, to fix the
some particular
of twelve ; or i
of money.
A priest one day

I shall stop here, but lest my readers should infer that it is because there is nothing more that could be said, I must first make the solemn declaration, that *there are crimes committed in the Hotel Dieu Nunnery too abominable to mention.*

I remember a variety of stories relating to confession, which I have heard told in the nunnery by priests; who sometimes become very communicative when intoxicated. One of their favourite topics is Confession. One of them showed a watch, one day, which he said was worth a hundred dollars. He had received it at confession, from a fellow who had stolen it, telling him that he must see it safely restored to the owner, while his intention was to get it into his possession to keep, which he did, and boasted of what he had done.

I have known priests to sit and talk about what they had done in the Confessional, for three or four hours at a time; and I have heard one give another instructions how he might proceed, and what he might do. One priest, I know, paid another fifty dollars, to tell him what was confessed to him by a young woman for whom he had a partiality, what he called love. Sometimes one will request another to send a particular lady to confess to him, either on account of her beauty or her property, for considerable sums are in such cases obtained from the rich.

In the country the common practice is, so far as I know, to fix the price of confession for the year, at some particular rate: as two bushels of wheat or of twelve; or if the person is not a farmer, a sum of money.

A priest one day said to another in my hearing,

You confess such a young lady, mentioning her name. She does not like you, I understand, because you kiss her. She is rich, and you have more rich persons to confess than I think is your share.

I knew a country priest, on a wager, drink shoe-full of wine. I was once near the priest's parlour, (as I have called it,) when I heard two of them in an altercation, about the speed of two insects; which led to a wager, on the question whether that insect would move quicker over a hot brick or a cold one. They told me to put a brick in the cold, while they heated one on the stove, and when both were prepared, they actually tried the experiment. This scene caused great excitement and loud talking. I have mentioned it to give an idea of the manner in which much time passes in the nunnery.

One day when I was employed in the hospital Aunt Susan came in, one of the old nuns, who had been absent for several days, and just returned. The circumstances which I am about to relate were brought to my mind the other day, by reading in Rosamond's book about the priests in Canterbury taking her into a monastery in disguise.

Aunt Susan was something like Aunt Margaret in having something the matter with her feet which made her rather lame. I noticed something strange in her appearance when she came into the hospital, and found that she was unable to apply the remedy in cupping a patient for whom that remedy had been prescribed, although she had been remarkably skilful before, and now appeared to try her best. I thought she must have taken too much

y, mentioning her
I understand, be
rich, and you hav
an I think is you

n a wager, drink
ce near the priest
when I heard two
he speed of two in
on the question wh
quicker over a h
ld me to put a bri
d one on the stove
they actually tri
caused great excite
have mentioned it
n which much tim

ayed in the hospita
he old nuns, who ha
s, and just return
am about to relat
other day, by rea
t the priests in Cu
n disguise.

like Aunt Margare
ter with her feet wh
ced something stran
came into the hos
nable to apply the
om that remedy h
e had been remark
appeared to try
have taken too mu

wine, and undertook to perform the operation at
her request, which pleased her so well, that she sat
down and became very talkative, in a manner little
consistent with the rules and practices of the insti-
tution.

She told me that she had just returned from
Quebec, whither she had gone some days before
from our Convent, on a visit to the Hotel Dieu
Nunnery of that city. She had gone in the dress
of a priest, in company with some father, and had
an opportunity to witness the arrangements and
habits of that institution. She went on to make re-
marks on different subjects which had come under
her observation, while I was employed in opera-
ting on the patient. She represented the rules in
the nunnery which she had visited as less strict, or
less strictly regarded, than our own; and said
there was much less order, peace, and quietness,
than we enjoy. The Superior, she said, had less
command over the nuns, and they were less order-
ly, and not so well contented. She had a cousin
there, as she informed me, a Miss Duraudeau, who
was very stubborn, and unmanageable. If she
were Superior, she declared she would half mur-
der her for her rebellious conduct.

All that I knew about the story told by Aunt
Jean, was what she told me. I did not see her in
the dress of a priest, but I had reason to believe
that the nuns often left the convent in such a dis-
guise, and that this part of her tale was by no
means incredible. Indeed, during my stay in the
Hotel Dieu, I personally knew more than one case
of the kind.

There was an old nun, notorious in Montreal,

known by the name of Sister Turcot, her family name. I was one day employed in the hospital, when I saw her enter dressed like a priest, in company with one or two fathers. She spent a few minutes there, during which she went up to one of the patients' beds, and performed prayers instead of one, and with such address that I should never have suspected any thing irregular, I think, if I had not known her appearance as well as I did. It was with the greatest difficulty that I refrained from laughing at a sight so ludicrous. She was at the time on her way out of the nunnery, in company with the priests, and after a short delay left the hospital, and went, as I supposed, into the street.

But I had still stronger evidence than this, of the departure of nuns in open daylight, in the dress of priests; for I was repeatedly called in to help them to put on their disguise. I have dressed the nun Sainte Felix, three or four times; and a hateful creature she was, in consequence of her jealous disposition. She was always thinking some one else a greater favourite than herself, with some priest.

The place where the change of dress was usually made was the Superior's room; and in the closet in the adjoining passage, at the end nearest the door, were always kept a number of priests' dresses, nearly a shelf full; as well as several black-hooded cloaks, like those worn by the Sisters of Charity.

A priest once told me, that he had three nuns to take out of the Convent that day, and was troubled to know how to do it. He had often taken out one

at a time, and lose them if they commonly directed along the street priests do so, a limping priest to tell a man from I have got through lead them all might start off for where we come to, The change disguises herself clothes of the through the pub- lary, and are off

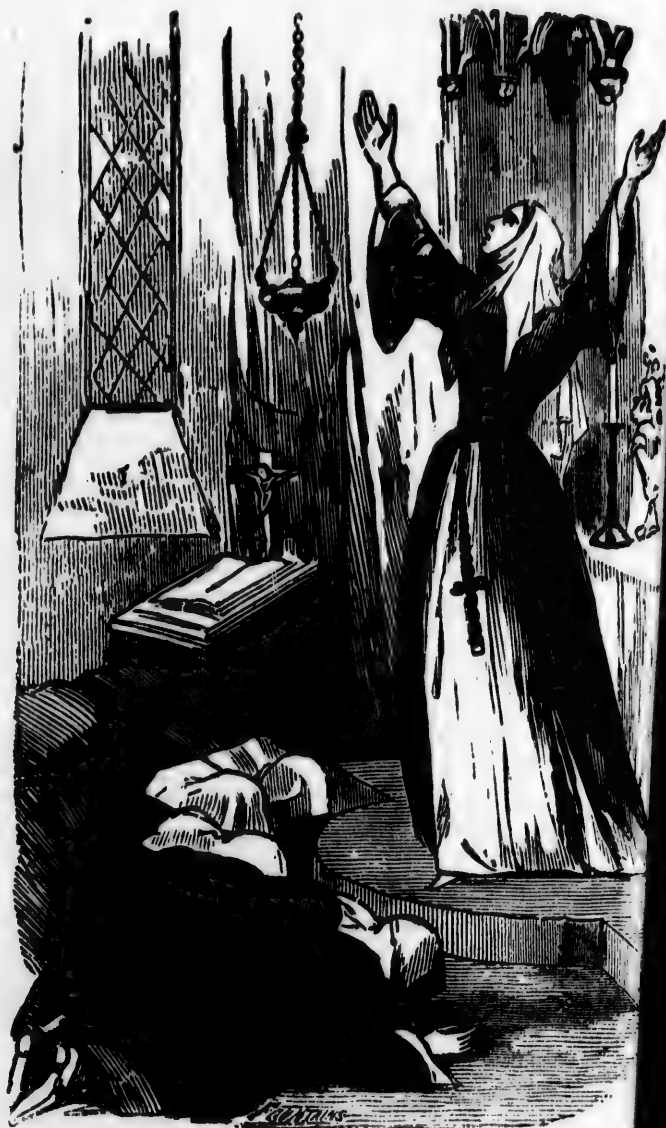
as a time, and had sometimes thought he might lose them if they were disposed to run away. He commonly directed them to limp as they passed along the streets ;—"for," said he, "many of the priests do so, and they might pass very well for limping priests; and in our dress, how can you tell a man from a woman? But," he added, "now I have got three; and if I should undertake to lead them all out together, the devils of women might start off three different ways at the first corner we come to, and how could I catch them?"

The change made in the dress, when a nun disguises herself as a priest, is complete. All the clothes of the latter are assumed. They pass through the public rooms in going out of the nunnery, and are often absent for several weeks.



SIX MON

SIX MONTHS IN A CONVENT.



NUNS KISSING THE FLOOR.



THE NUN;
OR,
SIX MONTHS' RESIDENCE
IN A
CONVENT.

BY REBECCA THERESA REED,
LATE INMATE OF THE URSULINE CONVENT, MOUNT
BENEDICT, CHARLESTOWN, MASSACHUSETTS.

LONDON:
W. NICHOLSON & SONS, LIMITED,
26, PATERNOSTER SQUARE, E.C.
AND ALBION WORKS, WAKEFIELD.

HE FLOOR.

Two or three f
standing of the
view by the rea
a preface to thi
ject of it, Miss
United States,
tion as would a
pear. The ma
copious notes w
of this there can
whether she w
sent it to the pr
ber of her friend
suasions to over
in print; partly
that her escape
conversations an
were bringing u
act the prevaili
favour of a con
which, among o
impulse to the a
the world.

In little more
escape, the conv
become so unpop
mob at length as

PREFACE.

Two or three facts, of importance to a clear understanding of the following narrative, should be kept in view by the reader, and are therefore stated briefly in a preface to this edition of the work. The chief subject of it, Miss Rebecca Reed, now of Boston in the United States, is not so responsible for the publication as would at first on the face of the narrative appear. The manuscript was prepared by her, from copious notes which she took as she had opportunity : of this there can be no doubt. But it may be doubted whether she would at her own instance ever have sent it to the press. It was first published by a number of her friends in that city, who united their persuasions to overcome her reluctance to its appearing in print ; partly to shield her from the reproaches that her escape from the convent, and her subsequent conversations and correspondence about its discipline, were bringing upon her ; but principally to counteract the prevailing passion among Protestants in favour of a convent education for their daughters, which, among other things, appeared to be giving an impulse to the advances of Popery in that quarter of the world.

In little more than two years after Miss Reed's escape, the convent was destroyed by fire. It had become so unpopular and unsightly an object, that a mob at length assembled and burnt it to the ground.

It was to be expected that its proprietors and advocates would charge this outrage on the efforts of Miss Reed and her friends to bring the institution into contempt. Hence the Superior, in her answer to Miss Reed's narrative, represents her as saying that her brother-in-law and another friend declared that *the convent should come down*. As no saying of this kind occurs in the narrative itself, and as Miss Reed protests against having ever uttered any thing like it, the calumny has been imputed to the Superior's desire to confirm suspicion against her brother-in-law, who was then under indictment on a charge of abetting the incendiarism.

The fact is, whatever influence the narrative had upon the public judgment and feeling against the convent, no unbiassed person could imagine any thing like a conspiracy in the family, or among the friends of this young lady to destroy the property of the establishment and hazard the lives of its inmates. The outrage was owing to a more extended and less recent prejudice against such institutions generally, and that more particularly. Their reported and acknowledged abuses—their inconsistency with the spirit and letter of American laws—their tendency to foster political and moral corruption, and to shelter criminals while they produced crime—were sufficient to account for violence, which yet every friend to good order must deplore.

SIX M

In the summer on Mount Setts, in company with a Roman Catholic Nun. I repeated their motives it well;" and apparent holy conversation with little impression on the "Religious" possession of land. We were told that they look at them and remarked, that our parents young lady who should like to have forgotten the consequence of what saying, "They chosen few;" they might for pray for the conversion of ignorant in

* By the term substituted the Ursuline.
† By the word heretics.

SIX MONTHS IN A CONVENT.

In the summer of 1826, while passing the Nunnery on Mount Benedict, Charlestown, Massachusetts, in company with my schoolmaster, the question was asked by a young lady, who I think was a Roman Catholic, how we should like to become Nuns. I replied, after hearing her explanation of their motives for retirement, &c. "I should like it well;" and gave as my principal reason, their apparent holy life, my love of seclusion, &c. The conversation which passed at that time made but little impression upon my mind. But soon after, the "*Religieuses*"* came from Boston to take possession of Mount Benedict as their new situation. We were in school, but had permission to look at them as they passed. One of the scholars remarked, that they were Roman Catholics, and that our parents disapproved of their tenets. The young lady who before asked the question, how we should like to become nuns, and whose name I have forgotten, was affected even to tears in consequence of what passed, and begged them to desist, saying, "They were saints, God's people, and the chosen few;" that they "secluded themselves, that they might follow the Scriptures more perfectly, pray for the conversion of sinners, and instruct the ignorant† in the principles of religion." This

* By the term "*Religieuses*," I mean those who constituted the Ursuline Community.

† By the word *ignorant*, is meant what they term heretics.

conversation, with the solemn appearance of the nuns, affected me very sensibly, owing probably to the peculiar state of my feelings. The impression thus made remained on my mind several months; and at the age of thirteen years and four months, I asked my parents if they were willing I should become an inmate of the convent. This proposition my parents were inclined to treat as visionary; but they soon discovered themselves to be in an error. Nothing of consequence was said on the subject; but soon after, owing to the delicacy of my health, and other reasons, it was deemed expedient for me to visit my friends in New Hampshire; and being fond of retirement, this arrangement accorded very well with my feelings.

While in New Hampshire, I spent many pleasant hours, which I think of with delight. Memory oft brings to view, and faithfully delineates those hours of retirement and happiness which I imagined I should spend, were I an inhabitant of a cloister.

While writing this narrative, I often lament my little knowledge of history; for, had I been more acquainted with it, I do not think I ever should have united myself to an institution of this nature. But to proceed; I never could prevail on my parents to say much on this subject. I kept silence, resolving in my own mind to become acquainted with some one who would introduce me to the Superior of the Ursuline Community, but did not ask any one till after the death of my mother. Previous to that event, I had become acquainted with Miss M. H., a domestic in Mr. H. J. K's family, near my father's house, in Charlestown.

appearance of the
owing probably to
. The impression
d several months;
and four months, I
willing I should be-

This proposition
at as visionary; but
s to be in an error.
aid on the subject;
licacy of my health,
ed expedient for me
mpshire; and being
ement accorded very

I spent many plea-
with delight. Mem-
fully delineates those
ppiness which I im-
an inhabitant of a

e, I often lament my
for, had I been more
think I ever should
stitution of this nature.
d prevail on my pe-
ject. I kept silence,
o become acquainted
roduce me to the Su-
nunity, but did not ask
my mother. Previ-
come acquainted with
Mr. H. J. K's family,
harlestown.

After my mother's decease, while residing with my father, my sisters being absent, Miss H. came to our house, and begged me to keep her as a domestic a little while, as she had no place. She had walked a great way for the purpose of seeing Mr. K., who had moved away. This was in the fall of 1830. After consulting with my father, I concluded to let her stay. She found me in great trouble and grief, in consequence of the absence of my two younger sisters, whom I very dearly loved, and who had gone to reside with my sisters in Boston. After family prayers were over, and I about retiring, I stepped from my room to see if Miss H. had extinguished her lamp, when, to my surprise, I found her kneeling, and holding a string of beads. I asked her what she was doing. She did not speak for some time. When she did, she said she was saying her "Hail Marys."* I asked her what the "Hail Marys" were, at the same time taking hold of the beads. She then said, "I say my prayers on these to the Blessed Virgin. My friends will, of course, excuse my curiosity at this time, for I had never before learned their manner of praying to saints and angels. Before I left her, she showed me an *Agnus Dei*† which she wore to preserve herself from the temptations of Satan. I cannot remember all the conversation which passed the next day on the subject; but I learned that she

* *Catholic prayer, translated from the Latin.*—"Hail, Mary! full of grace; our Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb, Jesus! Holy Mary, mother of God, pray for us sinners, now and at the hour of our death. Amen."

† Lamb of God;—a small piece of wax sewed up in silk in the form of a heart.

had been acquainted with the nuns in Boston, and was also acquainted with the Superior.

The first pleasant day, I asked her to accompany me to the Superior, which she did, and appeared, by her questions, to know my motive. She introduced me to the Superior in the following manner:—We were invited by a lay sister* to sit, who, after retiring, in a few moments made her appearance, requesting Miss H. to see her in another room. Soon after, the Superior came in, and embraced me with much seeming affection, and put the following questions to me:—How long since the death of my mother? Whether I ever attended the Catholic Church, or knew any thing of the principles of their religion? What I had heard respecting them—of their order—my views of it? What progress I had made in my studies? Whether I had attended much to history—knew any thing of embroidery, drawing, or painting, or any other ornamental work? Whether I had ever assisted in domestic affairs? After which questions, taking my hand, she said, “O, it feels more like a pancake, than any thing else.”† She inquired in what capacity I desired to enter the institution?—whether as a recluse or a scholar? Whether I had done attending school, &c.? I replied, that I did not consider my education complete—that I wished to go into the school attached to the nunnery, on the

* Those nuns who are occupied in domestic affairs.

† This may appear laughable; but as I intend to publish all which will be for the benefit of the reader, I cannot refrain from mentioning this, in order to show the course of flattery, &c., made use of by the Superior and those connected with the establishment, to draw the inexperienced into their power, and make them converts to the religion of the Pope.

uns in Boston, and
 perior.
 d her to accompany
 did, and appeared,
 motive. She intro-
 following manner:
 ter* to sit, who, af-
 made her appear-
 see her in another
 r came in, and em-
 affection, and put
 :—How long since
 ither I ever attend-
 ew any thing of the
 What I had heard
 er—my views of it?
 ny studies? Whether
 ry—knew any thing
 hinting, or any other
 I had ever assisted in
 questions, taking my
 more like a pancake,
 inquired in what ca-
 nstitution?—whether
 Whether I had done
 plied, that I did not
 ete—that I wished to
 p the nunnery, on the
 d in domestic affairs.
 but as I intend to pub-
 lish of the reader, I can-
 s, in order to show the
 of by the Superior and
 ishment, to draw the in-
 and make them converts

same terms as other pupils, until I had made suffi-
 cient progress to take the veil, and become a re-
 cluse—that my father was averse to my becoming
 a nun; but I was of opinion, that he would con-
 cur with my episcopal friends, in not objecting
 to my becoming a *pupil*. In the course of the in-
 terview, the Superior conversed much upon the
 Scriptures, and intimated, that I ought to make
 any sacrifice, if necessary, to adopt the religion of
 the Cross—repeating the words of our Saviour,
 “He that loveth father or mother more than me,
 is not worthy of me, &c.”

At a subsequent interview, the Superior desired
 me to see the Bishop or Clergy, remarking, she be-
 lieved I had a vocation for a religious life, and the
 Bishop would tell me whether I had or not. She
 also asked if I was acquainted with a Catholic
 friend who would introduce me to the Bishop, and
 mentioned a Mr. R. who would introduce me to
 him. I was unacquainted with Mr. R., but had
 seen him at my sister's house in Boston. She said
 that the Bishop or Mr. R. would also discuss the
 matter with my father, and reconcile him to Catho-
 licity. After consulting some friends who were
 in favour of the Catholic religion, I consented to
 see Mr. R.; who, being requested, called at my
 father's, gave me some Scripture proofs of the in-
 fallibility of the Romish church; as, “Thou art
 Peter, and upon this rock I build my church, and
 the gates of hell shall not prevail against it;” and
 “Whose sins ye retain they are retained, and
 whose sins ye remit they are remitted.” “He
 that will not hear the church, let him be to thee as
 an heathen man and a publican.” He (Mr. R.) de-

sired I would secrete the paper upon which the texts were quoted. He then took his leave, saying he would call to see me in town soon at the Misses S., when he would introduce me to the Bishop.

I will here remark, that previous to my joining the community, I heard of many miracles wrought by Catholic priests. Mrs. G. brought a lady one day in a chaise, to show me her eyes, which were restored by means of a priest, Dr. O'F. She, as Mrs. G. stated, was totally blind; but having faith in miracles, she knelt to her confessor, requesting him to heal her. After touching her eyes with spittle and holy oil, she immediately "received her sight."

Before the next interview with the Superior I visited my Protestant friends, the Misses S., when Mr. R. called and proposed to introduce me to the Bishop. He accordingly accompanied me to the Bishop's, and introduced me as the young lady who wished to become acquainted with the tenets of the Church, and recommended to him by the honoured Mother the Superior, with directions for his ascertaining my vocation as a fit subject for a recluse. The Bishop asked me if I knew the meaning of the word "Nun;" how long I had thought of becoming a nun; my opinion, and the opinion of my friends in regard to Catholicity; and as my feelings were easily wrought upon, more particularly at this time, questions were put to me, which more mature deliberation leads me to think were put under the impression that I was very ignorant, and which were very unpleasant for me to answer. He even went so far as to judge my secret thoughts,

CONVENT

er upon which the
ook his leave, say-
a town soon at the
introduce me to the

rious to my joining
ny miracles wrought
brought a lady one
er eyes, which were
Dr. O'F. She, as
nd; but having faith
onfessor, requesting
shing her eyes with
mediately "received

with the Superior I
the Misses S., when
o introduce me to the
ompanied me to the
as the young lady who
d with the tenets of
ed to him by the hon-
with directions for his
a fit subject for a re-
e if I knew the mean-
y long I had thought
ion, and the opinion
atholicity; and as my
upon, more particu-
were put to me, which
ds me to think were
t I was very ignorant,
sant for me to answer.
ge my secret thoughts,

saying he knew what was then passing in my mind. I then took my leave, undecided what course to pursue, and very little edified by the conversation of the Rt. Rev. Bishop. The Bishop gave directions to Mr. R. to purchase a catechism of the Catholic Church in the diocese of Boston, published with the approbation of the Rt. Rev. Bishop Fenwick, which I refused to accept.

About a week afterwards, I called upon the Superior, and made her acquainted with my conversation with the Bishop, likewise with my refusal of the catechism. On learning that my desire was still strong to become an inmate of the convent, she smilingly said, that for one so young as I was to wish to seclude myself from the world, and live the life of a *religieuse*, was impossible. I remarked, I did not like the Bishop so well as I expected. She exclaimed, "Oh! he is one of the servants of God; he did so to try your vocation;" and said that I should like him the better the next time I saw him.* After recommending me to pray for grace, she caused me to kneel and receive her blessing; after which she embraced me, and I returned to my father's house. I shortly after visited the Misses H. in Charlestown, and was introduced to Mrs. G., who was acquainted with the tenets of the Catholic Church, and also with Mr. B. the Catholic Priest. After a short acquaintance with her, I was requested to converse with Mr. B., the priest, which I did, and liked him very

* I did like him the next time that I called upon him, for he conversed in the most solemn manner, and after learning my name, said, "Is it possible that you have saint's name?" and gave me St. Teresa as my namesake, a beautiful wax figure habited as an Ursuline nun.

much. He also supplied me with books, from which I learned that I ought to venerate and receive the religion of the Catholic Church as the *only one and true religion*.

On Good Friday evening, I heard the most affecting Catholic sermon* I ever listened to, upon the Passion of our Divine Redeemer. I soon after visited at Mrs. G's, where I saw a fine drawing, exhibiting the peaceful and flourishing condition of the Holy and Apostolic Church, until the time of the Reformation, under Martin Luther. Mrs. G. recounted the sufferings of the Catholic Church in consequence of this "pretended reformation." My friends will understand, that by this time I had become a constant visitor at the convent. On being sent for at one time by the Superior, I met the Bishop at the convent, who was playing with the dogs; at the same time, the Superior, hastily approaching, embraced me in the most affectionate manner; as she did ever afterwards, when I visited her at the convent. She introduced me to the Bishop again, who did not appear to recognize me, and said that I was sister to the lady who visited him in Boston. At this time I thought the Superior and Bishop the most angelic persons living, and, in one instance, gave way to anger in consequence of hearing a few words spoken against them. On being told that my mind remained still the same, the Bishop remarked, "I will pray for you;" and recommended to me the advantage of continuing under the instruction of the priest, and said he should like to see my father or sister.

* I had before attended the lectures in Boston, at the time of the controversy between Dr. Beecher and the Catholics.

with books, from
venerate and re-
lic Church as the
ard the most affect-
ened to, upon the
ner. I soon after
a fine drawing, ex-
shing condition of
, until the time of
Luther. Mrs. G.
Catholic Church in
d reformation." My
by this time I had
e convent. On be-
Superior, I met the
as playing with the
Superior, hastily ap-
ne most affectionate
wards, when I visit-
ntroduced me to the
appear to recognize
ter to the lady who
is time I thought the
most angelic persons
ave way to anger in
words spoken against
y mind remained still
ed, "I will pray for
me the advantage of
ion of the priest, and
father or sister.

tures in Boston, at the
m Dr. Beecher and the

After the interview with the Bishop, I return to my father's, who was much displeased with the steps I had taken, and bade me renounce all connexion with the Catholics, or leave my friends. (This he said in a moment of excitement.) But being so much attracted by the apparent holiness of the inmates of the convent, and viewing this as the only true church, I wished to become a member of it.

Perhaps it will be proper to state some of Mrs. G's conversation. After hearing from her a pleasing account of the life of a nun, &c., I mentioned I should like to become one, and would, if I could prevail on my father and friends to consent; but unless I could, I must despair, as they would not be willing to advance the *money* which would be needed to go there. She replied, "It is not *money* that will ever induce them to take you; it must all be the work of God." She asked me what my church friends* said upon the subject. On my telling her that they were reconciled to my entering the institution, particularly as a scholar; that they liked the seclusion of the convent, &c., Mrs. G. stated that she could not see the least objection to my following my own inclination. I then took my leave, promising to see her at my friend Mrs. A's. The next time I saw her, she advised me to leave my father's house and all, for the sake of Christ. She said she would procure me ornamental work, which would support me, independent of my relatives. &c., which she did. I thanked her most heartily, and told her I thought I should

* My friends of the Episcopal Church thought I could have the privilege of writing when I desired to see them.

be happy if I were certain of going to a cloister. She gave me her word that I should. I then took up with her advice, and left my friends, I thought for life, as I had no doubt but that I should soon enter the Convent, resolving to leave all for the love of God and to consecrate the remainder of my days to his service. I believed Mrs G. to be my sincere friend, and an Episcopalian, as she had always told me she was, and placed myself under her protection. After visiting some Protestant friends, I found means to procure my clothing, &c., and went immediately to reside opposite the Catholic church. I employed myself while there in doing ornamental work, for my Catholic friends, and also in working lace for the Bishop, the altar, &c. About this time I was offered compensation, but refused it, and received a present of ten dollars, a crucifix, a pearl cross, and two books, with my name stamped upon them in gold letters, which presents I received as tokens of kindness and friendship.* And wishing to deny myself of any thing worldly, I gave up what jewellery I had, telling them I knew of no greater sacrifice I could at that time make, than to give up all the treasures my dear mother had left me. I also gave my globe and gold-fish, which were a present to me. At that time I thought I was *holy*, and could hardly

* I wish to have it understood, that the lettering on these books was my new name, "Mary Agnes Teresa." My baptismal name, it will be recollected, is Rebecca Theresa. The books were given me by Mrs. G., who said they were from the Bishop; and he afterwards, in the convent, confirmed the statement, saying, he knew at that time of my vocation, and for that reason sent me a religious name, which was a saint's name.

CONVENT.

going to a cloister. I then took my friends, I thought that I should soon leave all for the remainder of my life. I had Mrs. G. to be my sponsor, as she had already placed myself under her protection. I had Protestant friends, my clothing, &c., and opposite the Catholic friends, while there in doing so. I had Catholic friends, and also a shop, the altar, &c. I had compensation, but I had a present of ten dollars, and two books, with my name in gold letters, which were tokens of kindness and I could not deny myself of any of the jewellery I had, tell me what sacrifice I could make up all the treasures. I also gave my globe as a present to me. Alas! I could hardly

and, that the lettering on the globe, "Mary Agnes Teresa," I recollected, is Rebecca. I was given to me by Mrs. G., who said to me afterwards, in the convent, saying, he knew me for that reason sent me the globe with his name.

to speak to a Protestant. I had read many Catholic books. My time was wholly employed in working for the Catholics, except my hours for meditation and prayers.

The ordinance of baptism* was administered to me by Mr. B., himself and a Mrs. P. standing sponsors for me—my former baptism being considered by the Catholics *invalid*. While in Charlestown, I stood sponsor for Mrs. G's daughter, of whom I shall speak in the course of this narrative. I would here remark, had I taken up with the advice given me by many of my friends, I should not now have the unpleasant duty of relating these facts. But so it was: I had imbibed a relish for what I supposed to be "real pleasures," but which, alas! I have found, by sad experience, to be like the "waters of Marah." At an interview with the Superior, I was introduced to two of the "chosen Religieuses, the mother assistant and Mrs. Mary Benedict. The first question asked was, what word I brought from my friends. On my hesitating to give an answer, she insisted upon knowing what they said; on which I told her all they had said, word for word, as nearly as I could recollect; also the advice I received from a Mr. E., which appeared to displease her much; and although she strove to suppress her feelings, it was evident she was much displeased.

After some questions respecting Mr. E., the Superior remarked, he was none other than the man

* At the time of my baptism I was anointed with oil; a piece of salt was put in my mouth, the priest breathing three times upon it, and touching my eyes, ears, and nose with spittle, speaking Latin all the while. They profess to take these ceremonies from the Scriptures.

who made children's books. She also questioned me with regard to a conversation which took place between my brother and myself on Charlestown bridge (which was published in the "Jesuit,"* highly exaggerated), and appeared greatly pleased with the language of my mother, saying, with peculiar emphasis, "O, you will die a martyr to the cause of truth, should you die under persecution." I took my leave of her, promising to call again when she should desire.

After this, she wrote a letter to my father, of the contents of which I was then ignorant, but have since learned it contained offers of two or three quarters' schooling, free of expense. My father says he treated it with contempt; and his answer by the bearer was briefly this—"He wished me to have nothing to do with that institution; that my friends would prefer my going to a Protestant seminary." At my next interview with the Superior, she however told me, my father had become reconciled to my remaining with them two or three quarters, after which time, he would inform them whether he could consent to have me stay there longer as a teacher of music."† She previously

* I afterward asked priest B. to explain what it meant: he said Dr. O'F. made a mistake in writing it for the press; and he promised it should be corrected.

† I attended music because the Superior desired it; and she assured me there was no need of assistance from my friends, even if my father had consented, for I could with my needle be of sufficient use to the community to support myself without their assistance. She also told me I should study when I chose, and might have the privilege of coming into the Religious Community to recite to her.

also questioned which took place on Charlestown the "JESUIT,"* and greatly pleased saying, with pe- a martyr to the under persecution." ing to call again

to my father, of the ignorant, but have rs of two or three xpense. My father ot; and his answer "He wished me to nstitution; that my ing to a Protestant view with the Supe- father had become ith them two or three would inform them have me stay there."† She previously

explain what it meant: e in writing it for the d be corrected. Superior desired it; and d of assistance from my nsented, for I could with the community to sup- nce. She also told me I might have the privilege Community to recite to

presented me with some slate pongee, which was the uniform dress worn by the scholars in the public apartments, telling me at the same time to prepare myself, and having my things ready by such a day. She asked me, if I should come without the consent of my Boston friends, if I supposed they would insert any thing in the public papers, or make any disturbance, or come there for me? to which I replied, I thought not. After preparing myself for a public reception, I visited the Superior, when she said, if I would place myself under her care from this time, she would protect me for ever, and particularly from the persecution of the "heterodox," and she looked to heaven above for her reward.* She then stated that the Bishop had concluded to receive me, not as a member of the public department, but as a "Novitiate," which would screen me from the questions of the Protestant scholars. She also added, that I should be received as the other sisters were, and that we were to support ourselves by our talents and industry. The names of the sisters were, Mrs. Mary Ursula,† Miss Mary Magdalene, Miss Mary Joseph,

* I wish it to be understood, that being influenced by the Superior and Mrs. G's advice, after hearing Romish preaching and reading their books, I went to board at Mrs. H's., opposite the Catholic church, where I employed my time in ornamental work, visited the Convent often, and informed myself as much as possible of a recluse's life; lived as retired as the "Charity Sisters," except visiting some of my relatives three times, twice accompanied with Romish friends.

† Mrs. Mary Ursula came from New Hampshire, and was received as *Choix Religieuse*. She was the eldest in the community: this I learned from the Superior, who often reprimanded her for saying many words in an uncouth

and Miss Mary Austin. The latter was both teacher and pupil. I answered that I should like those conditions best. She then desired me to kneel down and take the following obligation:—"I do, with the grace and assistance of Almighty God, renounce the world for ever, and place myself under your protection, from this day, to consecrate myself to his honour and glory, in the house of God, and to do whatever obedience prescribes, and tell no one of this obligation but Mr. B., in confession." After this, the Superior summoned two of the "Choir Religieuse," who conducted me to the garden, where they left me to amuse myself. Presently the Superior joined me, wishing to know how I liked the garden, the flowers, &c. Observing a pocket album in my hand, she asked what I had hoarded up there—some worldly goods? She took it, and examining it desired to know if I wished to keep some money I had in it (fifteen dollars.) I replied no; as I was going to join them, I would intrust it to her care. She also requested me to sing one tune; I complied, and sung "There's nothing true but heaven." Her observation was, she should wish me to commence immediately with music. I then left the convent, and attended the sacraments of Confession and Communion; and on Sabbath morning, August 7th, 1831, I was at-

rustic manner, (such as *daoun* for *down*, &c.) telling her of her ignorance, &c. She never refused complying with the *rules*, but, when reprimanded, would kneel at once, and kiss the floor. I often wished to ask if she was happy, but dared not speak (without permission) to her. Their proceedings appeared so strange, that I was in continual fear. The novices frequently trembled when approaching "the Mother," particularly at confession.

ter was both
I should like
desired me to
obligation:—
e of Almighty
nd place myself
y, to consecrate
n the house of
prescribes, and
Mr. B., in con-
summoned two
conducted me to
o amuse myself.
wishing to know
rs, &c. Observing
asked what I had
y goods? She
to know if I wish-
it (fifteen dollars.)
join them, I would
requested me to
I sung "There's
observation was,
e immediately with
and attended the
Communion; and
h, 1831, I was at-
own, &c.) telling her
fused complying with
would kneel at once,
to ask if she was hap-
permission) to her.
nge, that I was in con-
ly trembled when ap-
rly at confession.

tended to the gate of the Convent by my friend Mrs. G. I was shown into the public parlour by the lay sister, and was requested to kneel and continue my devotion until the Superior made her appearance. She soon came, and made a sign for me to follow her. She led the way into a long room, darkened, at one end of which stood a large crucifix, made of bone, which I was afterwards informed was made of the bones of the saints. The Superior told me, in a whisper, it was the time of silence. But after arranging my dress, she took from her toilet a religious garb, which she placed upon my head, and bade me kiss it, saying it had been blessed by the Bishop. She then pronounced a short Latin prayer, while I was kneeling, at the same time giving me her blessing. After this, she conducted me into another apartment, where was a stranger whom she called a Postulant,* and giving me permission to speak, she left the room. A lay sister then entered the room with refreshment, after partaking which, we had permission to walk in one particular path in the garden. This stranger picked up a pear and began to eat it, and invited me to do the same, which I declined, being acquainted with the rules of the convent, which were very strict, as will be learned in the course of the narrative. She did not regard the rules so strictly as the Superior required, who, being made acquainted with her conversation by separately questioning us, sent her away, as she said, to another order;† but I now know that this was not the case.

* Candidate for a recluse.

† I believed she had gone to another order; and after

To return to our walk in the garden. The bell rang, when we were immediately conducted to the Religieuse Choir; and here the Superior caused me to kneel three times, before I could suit her. After the performances were over, which consisted of the office of adoration to the Blessed Virgin, and prayers to the saints, repeated in the Latin tongue, of which I knew nothing, we proceeded to the refectory, where we partook of our "portions." After saying Latin, we kneeled and kissed the floor, at a signal given by the Superior on her snuff-box. Before eating, one of the Religieuses said, "In nomine Domini nostri Jesu Christi," § all making the sign of the cross, and responding, "Amen." After receiving our portions we performed several devotions, such as kissing the floor and repeating Latin, while the "Angelus" was ringing. We

returning to my sisters, told them so (together with my pastor,) that she was with the Sisters of Charity; when, to my surprise, she called upon me, said she had never thought of going to another order, and that the Superior had not done by her as she agreed.

§ In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. When opportunity offered, I asked the Superior to explain the meaning. She said, in a very solemn manner, "You must not, my dear sister, give way to *curiosity*. Do you not recollect it is against the *rules* for a Religieuse to do so?" I answered, "Yes, Mamere!" and complied at once (by kissing the floor,) when she observed: "A Religieuse should never have a will of her own; as she grew in perfection in the order, she would understand what these words mean; it will be revealed to you when you are deserving." She taught me to believe that the "Office of the Blessed Virgin," (which was in Latin, and which we all repeated, without understanding it,) was none other than that chanted in heaven by the saints around the throne of the Almighty, and called the sweet communion of "All Saints."

arden. The bell conducted to the Superior caused I could suit her. which consisted blessed Virgin, and the Latin tongue, proceeded to the re- 'portions.' After ssed the floor, at a on her snuff-box. gieuses said, "In rist,"§ all making onding, "Amen." performed several oor and repeating was ringing. We

so (together with my rs of Charity; when, said she had never and that the Superior

Christ. When oppor- r to explain the mean- nner, "You must not, ty. Do you not recol- eligieuse to do so?" I complied at once (by rved: "A Religieuse n; as she grew in per- nderstand what these p you when you are de- ve that the "Office of a Latin, and which we ng it,) was none other the saints around the l the sweet communion

then went immediately to the "Community." On entering this room, the "novices" kneel and repeat the "Ave Maria,"† kiss the floor, and seat themselves for recreation, according to the rules given by the Superior, entitled, "Rules by the Reverend Mother." The following are the rules which were enclosed in a gilt frame, and suspended in the community; and it is the duty of every novice to read them at least once a week:—

1. To rise on the appearance of the Superior.
2. When reprimanded, to kneel at once and kiss the floor, until the signal be given to rise.
3. When speaking of the Superior, to say our Mother; when speaking to her, and to the professed Choir Religieuse, Mamere; to say Sister, when speaking to the Novices; of them, Miss; and of the professed Choir, Mrs.; to say *our* or *ours*, in instead of *my* or *mine*.
4. To say "Ave Maria" every time we enter the community.
5. Before entering any room, to give *three* knocks on the door, accompanied by some religious ejaculation, and wait until they are answered by three from within.
6. Not to lift our eyes while walking in the passage ways; also, never to *touch* each other's hands.
7. To stand while spoken to by the Bishop or Superior, and kneel while speaking to them; to speak in a particular tone.
8. If necessary to speak to the Superior during a time of silence, to approach her kneeling, and speak in whispers.

† Hall Mary.

9. Never to leave a room without permission giving at the same time our reason.

10. To rise and say the "Hour"; every time the clock strikes, except when the Bishop is present, who, if he wishes makes the signal.

The following are the written "*Rules and Penances of our Holy Father, Saint Augustine*," together with those of Saint Ursula, as near as I can recollect. They are read at the refectory table every week:—

1. To kneel in the presence of the Bishop, until his signal to rise.

2. Never to gratify our appetites, except with his holiness the Bishop's or a Father Confessor's permission.

3. Never to approach or look out of the window of the Monastery.

4. To sprinkle our couches every night with holy water.

5. Not to make a noise in walking over the Monastery.

6. To wear sandals and haircloth; to inflict

§ "*The Hour*.—O sacred heart of Jesus! always united to the will of thy Father, grant that ours may be sweetly united in thine. Heart of Mary! an asylum in the land of our captivity, procure for us the happy liberty of the children of Jesus. May the souls of the faithful departed, through the merits of Christ and mercies of God, rest in peace. Amen."

The above is what is called an *Hour*; there is a different, though similar one, for each of the twenty-four hours in the day. They are written, and placed in two gilt frames over the mantel-piece; twelve over the heart of Mary in one, and twelve over the heart of Jesus in the other. Every time the clock strikes, the one whose turn it is to lecture rises and says one of them.

punishment
imitation of

7. To sleep
one coverlet.

8. To walk
kneeling un-
touch any th-

9. Never to
thoughts on
rector's know-
food or water

10. Every
take holy water
gin, and make

11. If a Re-
prior, she is
the diocese, and
Never to su-
then contrary

12. Should
detect a *Relig-*
worldly thought
the rules of the

necessary to her
religious life,
retire to her cell
reat.

I shall now
er of the first
and I had perm-
the *Religieuse*.
my success,
ce they had
g bell for the

punishment upon ourselves with our girdles, in imitation of a Saint.

7. To sleep on a hard mattress or couch, with one coverlet.

8. To walk with pebbles in our shoes, or walk kneeling until a wound is produced. Never to touch any thing without permission.

9. Never to gratify our curiosity, or exercise our thoughts on any subject, without our spiritual director's knowledge and advice. Never to desire food or water between portions.

10. Every time, on leaving the community, to take holy water from the altar of the Blessed Virgin, and make the sign of the cross.

11. If a *Religieuse* priest in disobeying the Superior, she is to be brought before the Bishop of the diocese, and punished as he shall think proper. Never to smile except at recreation, nor even when contrary to religious decorum.

12. Should the honoured Mother, the Superior, detect a *Religieuse* whose mind is occupied with worldly thoughts, or who is negligent in observing the rules of the Monastery, which are requisite and necessary to her perseverance and perfection in a religious life, she should immediately cause her to retire to her cell, where she could enter into a retreat.

I shall now continue my narrative of the remainder of the first day. At recreation, the Postulant and I had permission to embrace in a new form, the *Religieuse*. After that, they congratulated me on my success, saying they had ever prayed for me since they had heard of my vocation. The evening bell for the Latin office now rang, and we as-

sembled at the choir, where we performed such ceremonies as I before named, until the time of retiring. As we were strangers, the Superior conducted us to the infirmary, where other Novices were preparing to retire, and before leaving it, bade us not to rise until we had orders. Next morning being holy-day morning, the bell rang at three, instead of four, as it usually does, for meditation in the choir. While the *Angelus** was ringing, at five A. M. we were called to attend Complin and Prime, until half-past six; then Litany to the Saints. After Litany, the bell rang for diet in the refectory, every morning, except Friday; on which day we assembled for confession to the Superior.

The manner of confession to the Superior is as follows:—The room is first darkened, and one lighted wax taper placed upon the Superior's throne; and she is considered as filling the place or station of the Blessed Virgin. After taking their places in the greatest order and silence, the Religieuses respond. Then the lecturess reads from a book, called Rules from the Ursuline Order by Saint Ursula, about complaining of the cold, our clothing, food, &c., &c. They sit on their feet during the reading, a posture *extremely painful*. The reading finished, the Superior whispers to the sisters to approach her separately, which they do; each one in her turn approaches, and repeats the following: "Our Mother, we acknowledge that we have been guilty of breaking the

* The *Angelus* is the bell rung while repeating the three salutations and three Hail Marys.

we performed such until the time of re- the Superior con- here other Novices before leaving it, bade ers. Next morning bell rang at three, in- es, for meditation in *thus** was ringing, at attend Complin and then Litany to the ll rang for diet in the except Friday; on confession to the Su-

to the Superior is at st darkened, and one upon the Superior's ed as filling the place Virgin. After taking order and silence, the n the lectress read from the Ursuline Order complaining of the cold &c. They sit on their posture *extremely painful* the Superior whispers her separately, which her approaches, and r Mother, we acknow guilty of breaking th

rung while repeating the all Marys.

rules of our *Holy Order*, by lifting our eyes while walking in the passage-ways; in neglecting to take holy water on entering the community and choir; failing in respect to our Superior, and veneration to our Father; failing in religious decorum, and in respect to our vows—poverty and obedience; for which we most humbly ask pardon of God, penance and forgiveness of you, our Holy Mother." As each one finishes, the "Holy Mother" gives her advice and penances, and her blessing; they then kiss her feet and sometimes make the cross with their tongues on the floor; when making their inclination, they retire to the choir to perform the penances.

After they are all assembled in the choir, the Superior says, *Kyrie eleison*, and they all answer, *Kyrie eleison*; the Superior says, *Christe eleison*, and they answer, *Christe eleison*, &c., &c. She then says Litany to the Saints in Latin beginning with "Sancta Maria," and they respond, "Ora pro nobis," &c. &c. This ceremony is very solemn. It is performed until eight o'clock, A. M., when we receive our portion sitting on the floor. The bell rings at half-past eight for young ladies' recreation. When we attend to study until a quarter before eleven; then private lecture until eleven; then bell rings for the examination of conscience till a quarter past eleven; then for diet.* The services at diet are after repeating Latin:—first, they seat themselves in order upon a bench, first crossing themselves in their

Our diet consisted of the plainest kind of food, principally vegetables and vegetable soups, Indian puddings, and very seldom meat. Our tea was made of herbs, sometimes of the bitterest kind. We partook of this diet

appointed places, on one side of a long narrow table; before each one lies a small linen napkin or serviet, rolled round another small cloth, containing a knife and fork; beside each serviet is a plate containing the "portion;" then the Superior enters and passes along to her table, at the head of the room, the nuns making their inclinations as she passes. She then makes a signal on her snuff-box, and the "Religieuse," whose turn it is to speak, says, "*Benedicite*;" the Superior answers, "*Benedicite*;" and so it continues, in a similar manner, from one to the other, the "Efficient" repeating a Latin prayer. The Superior then makes the signal for the lectress to read from the lives of the Saints and martyrs, while the others are eating. When the signal is given, each one rolls up the knife and fork in the napkin, and lays

in imitation of the Holy Fathers of the desert to mortify our appetites. Pumpkins, stewed with molasses and water, served us sometimes as a dessert. Occasionally we had mouldy bread to eat. A very insignificant piece of butter was sometimes placed on our plates. The Superior's diet was far better than ours; sometimes it was sumptuous, wine not excepted. I ascertained this, and occasionally, in turn, went round to gather the fragments. She sent me, on two occasions, some apple-parings to eat, as a part of my portion. Sometimes the Religieuses deny themselves any diet; prostrate, kiss the feet of those who remain at table, performing various kinds of penance, while the others are eating and listening to the reading. Those who have permission to deny themselves in the morning, take their work-baskets as they pass the refectory, where they sew by candle-light, as the lectress is reading. This has a solemn and impressive appearance.

* The Efficient is one who repeats prayers, and officiates during the office, and serves at Mass.

CONVENT.

as she found it—(they also open it at a sign ;) and the one whose turn it is to do so, after kissing the floor, as a token of humility, takes from the drawer a white apron and a basket containing a napkin, and after putting on the apron, brushes the fragments from the tables into the basket, and takes the servets, making her inclination to each one. She then takes the articles off the Superior's table, one by one, in a napkin, in a solemn manner. If any eatable fall on the floor, they must be taken up in a napkin, and not by any means with the bare hands.

After this, the Superior makes a signal, and the lecturess and before-mentioned *religieuse* kneel in the middle of the floor and kiss it, and immediately arise and join the others in repeating the Latin prayers; after which the lecturess rings the Angelus. During this ringing, they all kneel and repeat it, then assemble in the community for "recreation." During this they are permitted to converse with one another, but in a particular and low voice, and only on such subjects as the Superior will give them. If she be absent, the conversation is usually on the subject last read at the table; they work during the time.

After recreation, public lectures take place, and one o'clock the bell rings for "visitation" to the altar, which, with the Vespers, occupy us a hour and a half. Then the Rosary is said. On hearing the bell again, we all assemble in the community, where there is a "point of prayer" read. Then the lectures occupy us until five; meditation and recreation.

repeats prayers, and observes at Mass.

flection half an hour longer; then the bell rings again for diet, where we go through the observances before named; then recreation forty-five minutes; then the *Miserere*, during which the bell rings; then public prayers in the choir; then the *Benedictus* rings, and the lay sisters* come up into the choir. Matins, lauds, and prayers continue from seven until nine o'clock, when we retire while the bell is ringing, except those who attend lessons and penances. This concludes a day and its services. The same course was pursued every day except Fridays and Sundays, when there was some variation.

I had become in about a week, apparently a great favourite of the Superior, that although remiss in duties, it was in a measure overlooked. She would even reprimand the religieuses for my example and my faults, one instance of which I will give. Failing to arrange the Superior's toilet, and seat, and cricket, it being my turn, one of the religieuses was reprimanded in my stead, and immediately knelt and kissed the floor. After this I was sent for to the Bishop's room, where the young ladies assemble on mass morning, and after kneeling, &c., the Superior asked me how things appeared; if they appeared as I thought they would; I liked my food, &c. Feeling a repugnance to answer her, she said "Recollect yourself." I told her I liked all pretty well, except my couch. She left, telling me to beg the intercession of St. Teresa.

* One lay sister remains kneeling in the entry until we get to the psalm called *Te Deum*, when she rings while we are saying it. The Religieuses bow or kneel, &c., but do not join in saying the office.

CONVENT.

then the bell rings
rough the observan-
tion forty-five min-
ring which the bell
the choir; then the
sisters* come up in-
and prayers continue
when we retire while
ose who attend lessons
es a day and its ser-
s pursued every day
when there was some

a week, apparently a
erior, that although re-
asure overlooked. She
religiens for my ex-
stance of which I will
he Superior's toilet, and
my turn, one of the re-
in my stead, and imm-
e floor. After this I w-
room, where the young
orning, and after kne-
ed me how things appe-
thought they would;
eling a repugnance to a-
collect yourself." I to-
except my couch. St.
intercession of St. Tere-

neeling in the entry until
eum, when she rings w-
iens bow or kneel, &c.,
ce.

The next day my couch was exchanged for a bet-
ter, and the image of St. Teresa put near it for my
use.

Soon after I became an inmate of the convent,
the Bishop came into the community and said,
"How does that little nun? And what have you
done with sister Stimson?" The Superior answer-
ed, that she was not fit for the order, and she had
sent her to the Sisters of Charity. (See note on
page 16.) He then addressing me, asked how I
liked Mount Benedict. I said, "Very well, my
Lord." He then said, "O, but you will have to
strive with the temptations between the good and
evil spirits;" and he then explained all the horrors
of Satan, and asked me where St. Teresa my name-
ake was, and if I had read her life; and told me
to say, as she did, these words:—"Now come, all
of you; I, being a true servant of God, will see
what you can do against me," by way of challenge
to the evil ones, and beg her intercession. He
told me my sister had been to see if I had taken
the veil, or had any thought of taking it; and he
said I might rest contented, as my friends would
trouble me no more.* He then told me the differ-
ence between a holy life and a worldly life; said,
the devil would assail me as he did St. Teresa, and
make me think I ought to go back to the world,
and make me offers of worldly pleasures, and pro-
mise me happiness. In order to prevent this I
must watch and pray all the time, and banish en-
tirely worldly thoughts from my mind, and throw

I have since learned it was my sister and another
sister. They say he told them I had not taken the veil,
and hoped I soon would do it.

holy water at the evil spirits, and challenge them to come if they dare. Perceiving the unpleasant effect this had on my feelings, he portrayed in lively colours the happiness which would flow from my resisting the evil spirits, and what a crown of glory would be placed upon my head by the angels.

According to my confessor's orders, I took upon myself many austere penances, &c.; but the Superior noticing my exhaustion from this cause, released me from my austerities for a time, saying, I was a favoured one; and she gave me permission to rest while the others rose to say *midnight matins** and to hear mass. On the exaltation of the holy cross, the Bishop gave us his blessing, we all kneeling in the community. In conversation with the sisters, he remarked one had not a very pleasant countenance; and he asked me how I was pleased with my teacher, saying, he hoped she put a more pleasant countenance on while instructing me.

Once, while walking with the Bishop and Superior, we met a stranger, upon which the Superior required us to turn our backs while she conversed with him. After he left the garden, the Bishop and Superior held some conversation together apart from us, of which I overheard the following words of the Bishop:—"I fear he did not come here accidentally, as he stated, but for some particular purpose." Immediately the Mother-assistant came to me, saying, that gentleman looked very much

* Midnight mass and midnight matins are said at night during Lent, and midnight mass always on Christmas. This is a time of special humiliation and prayer.

I challenge them
ing the unpleasant
he pourtrayed in
ch would flow from
what a crown of
my head by the

orders, I took upon
&c.; but the Su-
from this cause, re-
for a time, saying, I
gave me permission
o say *midnight ma-*
the exaltation of the
his blessing, we all
In conversation with
had not a very plea-
asked me how I was
ing, he hoped she put
on while instructing

the Bishop and Super-
n which the Superior
ts while she conversed
the garden, the Bishop
versation together apart
ard the following words
did not come here as
out for some particu-
e Mother-assistant came
man looked very much

ght matins are said at night
mass always on Christmas
lation and prayer.

like me, and asked me if he was not my brother ;
and having permission to look, I answered, " No,
he is not." We then retired within the convent.
The Bishop observed to me, just before we went
in, that that gentleman looked no more like me
than one of the dogs of the convent.

I was particularly hurt in witnessing the austeri-
ties put on a religieuse, named sister Mary Mag-
dalene, who came from Ireland. Once, while re-
citing the offices, she, by accident, or losing
breath, spoke in a lower key than she should. At
a signal from the Superior, she fell prostrate before
her desk, and remained so for one hour, until the
office was finished, when she had permission to
rise. This was the first time I thought the Super-
rior had done wrong.* Soon after this, in private
confession to the Superior, she appeared determin-
ed to know my thoughts, and put many questions
to me that were hard to answer. I would here re-
mark, that this is the practice at auricular confes-
sion. She told me to beg the intercession of my
patron saint, of the Blessed Virgin, and Saint
Ursula. I complained to her of my strength's fail-
ing, and of my diet not being such as I was used
to. She replied, that a religieuse should have no
choice, and that I should have left my feelings in
the world; and she immediately imposed the fol-
lowing penances :—to make the sign of the cross
on the floor with my tongue, and to eat a *crust* of
bread in the morning of my portion. The first of

* The Superior often made mistakes in repeating the
office, by endeavouring to repeat it without the book.
and I learned afterwards from Mary Francis, that the
Superior did not understand it.

these penances I did not fulfil to the letter, making the sign of the cross with my hand instead of my tongue.*

After this, a daughter of my friend Mrs. G. came to the convent, and was permitted to spend some time with me in private. I also had some trifles given me as presents from this little girl, and leave to send what word I wished to my friends. This girl told me at the time, she was coming there to school soon; I therefore sent by her my love to my friends, informing them that I liked the convent very well, and should be very happy to see them, if they would not speak against my religion.†

Soon preparations were made for my taking the vows of a Religieuse, a Novena (nine days' devotion) being said for me, and for my perfection in a religious life, and prayers for the conversion of my friends. About this time my sponsor, the priest, visited the convent, and talked, as I then thought, like a godlike person. My reception was to take place *privately*, because we wished to keep my father ignorant of the manner in which I had been received, and because he might hear of it, should it take place publicly; as he before said, I was not eighteen, and he could prevent my going there. They said he could not prevent me, as I was now of age. I was perfectly happy at this time, and presented the Superior with some lines of poetry

* I would state to the reader, that those things were received on my part with great repugnance; but the Superior said they were to prove my vocation, and I submitted without a murmur.

† This message my friends never received, as I have since learned. I was deceived in regard to the friendliness of Mrs. G.

the letter, making
and instead of my

y friend Mrs. G.
permitted to spend

I also had some
om this little girl,
ished to my friends.
he was coming there
nt by her my love to
at I liked the con
ry happy to see them,
st my religion.†

de for my taking the
na (nine days' devo-
or my perfection in a
the conversion of my
y sponsor, the priest,
ed, as I then thought,
reception was to take
wished to keep my fa-
in which I had been
ght hear of it, should
e before said, I was not
event my going there.
vent me, as I was now
ppy at this time, and
n some lines of poetry

r, that those things were
t repugnance; but the Su-
my vocation, and I sub

never received, as I have
in regard to the friendshi

which gave her proof of my sincerity and content-
ment.

She appeared very much pleased with the verses,
embraced me very affectionately, and expressed her
hearty approbation of my perseverance in perform-
ing the duties of the order, and said the request
for her entreaties that I might persevere in a re-
ligious life should be granted, and she would show
the lines to the Bishop. She accordingly did so,
when he was present one day, and he said he must
write my conversion, for it was so much like St.
Teresa's, my namesake. After this, she gave or-
ders to have all my worldly dresses, being ten in
number. and other articles of wearing apparel, al-
tered for those young ladies whom she clothed and
educated; and for me she ordered a long habit to
be prepared, which was to be blessed by the
Bishop; also a veil which they said denoted pu-
rity and innocence.

One time I failed in rising at the Angelus,*
which was not noticed by the Superior. The next
morning a Religieuse did not rise until the ring-
ing of the Angelus, and when she came into the
refectory we were at diet. She brought her pillow,
and kneeling, kissed it, and said as follows:—"I
have neglected to obey the commands of the Supe-
rior, and have not risen until the Angelus, which
I am most heartily sorry for; and I humbly ask
pardon of God, and penances of you, our holy
Mother." The Superior said no one who disobey-
ed her commands should be permitted to remain in

* My time was to rise at Angelus, which was rung at
seven, while the Religieuses rose at four, except on holy-day
mornings, when they rose at three.

this monastery. Her penance was to kiss the floor, and remain kneeling until lecture and diet were over.

The Bishop, about this time, came to examine our work, &c. After hearing us sing, he complimented us; said he should hardly have thought that I could have learned of heretics to sing and work so well; and desired me to learn him to work lace, as he feared I should not finish his robe for Christmas. After being presented, as usual, with wine, he retired. The Bishop's wine is presented in a golden cup. The religieuse who presents it remains kneeling until he has drank it.

As was usual on Saturday evening, after signifying our obedience to the Superior, by prostrating and kissing the floor, we received permission to visit the "*sanctum sanctorum*" on Sabbath morning, to receive the Eucharist, all of us except my teacher (the one who the Bishop said did not look pleasant, and whom I saw in tears on Sunday morning.) The Superior made a signal for me to follow her into the Bishop's room, when, first inquiring into my feelings, as she usually did, she asked me what I thought of my teacher; if she had put any questions to me while at my lessons, and how long before I thought I should be able to pronounce my vows, and take charge of a class in music. She asked me, at another time, what I thought was the reason of my teacher's crying—(her name was Miss Mary Francis). I replied, I did not know. She said it was the operation of the Holy Spirit, and her devotional feelings were very deep.

The next day, while we were at our recreation

was to kiss the
il lecture and diet

e, came to examine
ns sing, he compli-
ardly have thought
eretics to sing and
to learn him to work
t finish his robe for
ented, as usual, with
p's wine is presented
euse who presents it
s drank it.

evening, after signify-
perior, by prostrating
received permission to
m" on Sabbath morn-
t, all of us except my
ishop said did not look
in tears on Sunday
made a signal for me to
e room, when, first in-
s she usually did, she
of my teacher; if she
e while at my lessons,
ght I should be able to
ke charge of a class in
t another time, what
my teacher's crying-
Francis). I replied,
it was the operation of
evotional feelings were

Miss Mary Francis appeared in great distress from
some cause, and in tears. She soon after pencil-
led a few lines, and approached the Superior kneel-
ing, &c, and presenting the paper. She appeared
confused and very angry, and bade her take a seat.
After this, the Superior thought it necessary for
me to retire to the infirmary and take an emetic,
which I did the next day. The day after this I
had orders to take medicine, which I was averse
to; and on my declining, the infirmarian* made
the sign of the cross a number of times, and told
me it was the Superior's orders, and I could not
avoid taking a part of it. I remained in the infirm-
mary two days without a fire, and the weather was
very cold. I had then permission to go to the
choir, where I immediately fainted, at which the
Superior was angry, and said in a whisper, she had
told me *I ought not to have any feelings.*

For a while, sister Mary Francis was not pre-
sent at the office and recreations as usual, and the
Superior gave as a reason for her absence, that she
was ill. But it will be necessary for me to leave
for a moment Miss Mary Francis, and speak of
Miss Mary Magdalene. The latter was put over
me as a teacher, in the room of Mary Francis,
whom I then supposed to be sick; but I afterwards
learned that she was confined, that she might have
a better opportunity to clear herself of the temp-
tations of Satan. Sister Mary Magdalene told me
she was about to leave this world, and wished to
give me some advice. She said she thought it

were at our recreations

* The Infirmarian is one who tends upon the sick. I
as well as usual when I took the emetic.

was God's will to take her to himself. After reminding me of the request due to the Superior, and of my negligence in not kissing the floor in the choir, and of my looking up while walking in the passages, she then spake of sister Mary Francis; she said she would soon be able to give lessons as before; but wished to know which of the novices I thought had the best vocation for a religious life, and which one would be most likely to return to the world. To the latter I replied, "Sister Mary Francis." She asked why. I said she did not appear to observe the rules so strictly as the others. She asked me if that would be any inducement for me. I replied, "No, not *that*." She appeared quite unable to talk, but notwithstanding her weak state and trembling hands, she sewed all the time. I told her it gave me pain to see her distress herself so. With a peculiar emphasis she said, "Sister, *obedience!*" and in a very affecting manner made the sign of the cross.

While at my lessons one day, in the hours of silence, the Superior and Mother-assistant came wishing me to tell them where Miss Mary Francis was. I replied I had not seen her. They left the room, and soon Miss Mary Francis entered, in tears. The Superior followed, and seizing her by the arm, shook her violently, and threatening to punish her for disobedience, and wished she had a *cell* *austere enough* to put her in, and exclaimed "Shame! Shame! you 'disedify' Miss Mary Agnes."* She then told her not to feign sickness.

* All the nuns have the name of Mary, and added to it is the name of some canonized saint. Miss Mary Agnes was my name.

CONVENT.

himself. After re-
to the Superior, and
ing the floor in the
while walking in the
sister Mary Francis;
le to give lessons as
which of the novices
on for a religious life,
st likely to return to
eplied, "Sister Mary
I said she did not ap-
strictly as the others.
be any inducement for
that." She appeared
withstanding her weak
she sewed all the time.
o see her distress her-
nphasis she said, "Sis-
very affecting manner

e day, in the hours of
Mother-assistant came
here Miss Mary Francis
seen her. They left the
Mary Francis entered, in-
owed, and seizing her by
tly, threatening to pun-
and wished she had a cell
her in, and exclaimed
disedify' Miss Mary Ag-
ner not to feign sickness

ame of Mary, and added to it
ed saint. Miss Mary Ag-

again, but to show by her appetite her illness. After the penance of kissing the floor, &c., she gave her a number of prayers to copy for the Protestant scholars. And from that time we were watched with the strictest scrutiny. The next day the Superior gave me permission to write to my father. She said Miss Mary Francis was crazy, and she should not keep her in the convent more than a month longer, if she did not reform. Mary Francis' grief will be well recollected by those in the public apartments. The next day I wrote to my father. The letter* was corrected by Miss Mary Francis, who was not crazed, as stated by the Superior. I then whispered to her (it being the time of silence,) and asked the cause of her grief. She wrote on a slate, "she could not." A religieuse was in the room, watching us very narrowly, and to mislead the religieuse, she reminded me of making false syntax. We next met in the community for recreation. The Superior gave the Mother-assistant permission to speak (Miss Mary Francis was absent.) She began by asking how she did. The Superior answered, "She goes on in her old way;" and observed that she was unfit for the order. The Mother-assistant said, "O, Mamere, let me pray, at least, a month longer for her;" and turning to the novices, asked them to join with her. The Superior granted her permission, but handed her a letter to read. The Mother-assistant turning to us, said, "Sisters, pay attention. This letter is from Miss Mary Francis' aunt, Miss I, of New York."

* This letter was never received by my father.

The substance of it was, that she had received her (the Superior's) letter, and was sorry to have recommended to her that person, but she thought she had reformed, and would be a suitable member for a monastery; and she begged pardon for introducing one to her who had disturbed the peace of her little community, and hoped, if it were possible, she would not long be troubled with her, &c. The Superior said, after the close of the letter, "Sisters, you may still continue to pray for her, and I will see about this thing, as it may be a temptation of the adversary." Two or three days after this, I met Miss Mary Francis at my lessons in the community, and again asked her to tell me her distress by writing on the slate, or I would tell the Superior I could not learn of her. She begged I would not, and told me she was under a solemn obligation not to make known the cause of her grief. She asked me if I was happy; I told her I was not, to see her unhappy, and again entreated her to tell me the cause of her tears. She said I must not tempt her to break her promise, for if we were detected in conversation, she would be made still more unhappy. I then asked, if she had recovered from her illness, why she did not go to her class, &c. She said the Superior had forbidden her, but she could not answer any other questions. I had formed a strong attachment for this lady, and it gave me pain to see her so distressed.

At next recreation, the Superior sent us word to meet the Bishop in the meditation garden. Sister Mary Magdalene being too exhausted to walk as fast as we did, the Bishop asked who that was; and being told, he burst into a laugh, and said,

she had received her
 as sorry to have re-
 , but she thought she
 suitable member for
 ed pardon for intro-
 rbed the peace of her
 if it were possible,
 d with her, &c. The
 of the letter, "Sisters,
 y for her, and I will
 y be a temptation of
 ee days after this, I
 y lessons in the com-
 to tell me her distress
 would tell the Supe-

She begged I would
 nder a solemn obliga-
 ne cause of her grief.
 y; I told her I was
 d again entreated her
 ears. She said I must
 promise, for if we were
 e would be made still
 ed, if she had recovered
 d not go to her class,
 had forbidden her, but
 her questions. I had
 t for this lady, and it
 distressed.

uperior sent us word to
 titation garden. Sister
 exhausted to walk as
 asked who that was;
 nto a laugh, and said,

"Sister Magdalene, when are you going to heaven?"
 She replied, in a voice scarcely audible, "I have
 no will of my own, my lord; whenever it shall
 please God to take me."* She thought she should
 not live to see Christmas. We then assembled in
 the community, and when all were seated, the
 Bishop inquired, "Where is that sober-faced nun?"
 Being told by the Mother-assistant that she was
 giving lessons to Miss F., he took the letter before
 spoken of, and looking it over, handed it to the
 Mother-assistant, saying, "Why do you keep her,
 and why does she not go to her class?" The Su-
 perior said the young ladies were not pleased with
 her as a teacher. He asked if all disliked her.
 Miss Mary Benedict replied, "No, my lord; some
 in the French class appear to like her. On which
 he said, "show them that letter."

At my next lesson, I told Mary Francis, if she
 did not explain to me the cause of her grief, I
 should tell the Superior; for I could receive no
 benefit from her instructions while she was so con-
 fused, and the Superior had reprimanded me for
 not learning my lessons; and I promised, if she
 would tell me, I would not inform the Superior.
 She replied that she could not answer me *then*, but
 would think of it, and give me an answer in the
 afternoon. Accordingly, in the afternoon, a reli-
 gieuse being present, watching us, she communi-
 cated what I desired to know by writing on a slate,†

* It is here to be understood, that sister Mary Magda-
 lene was in a consumption, and had entered the convent
 nine months before in perfect health. She was worn out
 with austerities.

† We were at the piano; she pretended to write notes,
 &c.

and desired to know if I was happy. I answered, I did not like the Superior so well as formerly. She then wrote, that while at prayer and meditation, she concluded it was her duty, particularly as I was dissatisfied, to give me some advice, and considered her promise before made as not binding; and receiving for me a promise of secrecy, she proceeded to say that she hoped she should be pardoned if any thing wrong was said by her, as my whole happiness depended on the words she should communicate. "I am," says she, "kept here by the Superior, through selfish motives, as a teacher, under a slavish fear and against my will. I have written several letters to my father, and have received no satisfactory answer; and I have for a long time felt dissatisfied with my situation. The Superior has failed in fulfilling her promise, not complying with the conditions on which I was received; which were, that as she was in need of a teacher, particularly in French and music, I might take the white veil, and leave whenever I choose; and my taking the veil, 'as it was only a custom,' should not compel me: and that my obligations should not be binding. My father thinks I can leave at any time, for I do not believe he has received my letters; and that letter you have heard read as Miss I's. is a forged one." We were here interrupted by the entrance of the Superior, who made a sign for me to follow her into the Bishop's room. After asking me how I progressed in my lessons, and hearing me read in the "Novices' Directory,"* she

* This is a book which is used only in convents. It directs us to respect the Bishop as a representative of the

happy. I answered, as well as formerly. She never and meditation, particularly as I was in advice, and considerations not binding; and in secrecy, she proceeded should be pardoned if I, as my whole happiness she should communicate here by the Superior, as a teacher, under my will. I have written and have received no answer for a long time. The Superior promised, not complying with what I was received; in need of a teacher, music, I might take the one I choose; and my only a custom, should obligations should not make I can leave at any time. She has received my letter and have heard read as Miss were here interrupted by the Superior, who made a sign to the Bishop's room. After that in my lessons, and in the 'Directory,'* she

only in convents. It differs as a representative of the

observed that I looked melancholy, and commanded me to tell her the reason. I replied that I did not feel well, that my lungs were sore since taking the emetic,* &c. She said that was only a notion, and bade me tell the true reason without any more equivocation. My words were, I did not love her so well then as formerly. She exclaimed, "O my child, I admire you for your simplicity;" and asked me my reason for not loving her, which I declined giving. She commanded "*obedience*" with seeming mildness, and I told her that I thought she did not pay that attention to me she had promised, and that she was not so kind to me as formerly. She then said, a religious should have no will of her own; that their Superior put many things upon them, in order to try their vocation. She then recounted the sufferings of a certain saint, and bade me pray to that saint for protection; and showed me a phial, which she said contained some of Saint Teresa's tears; and said, if I would save my tears while in devotion, she could tell by them whether I should ever arrive to the perfection of a saint. She then gave me her blessing, and reminded me of my reception, which was soon to take place.

person of Christ, and in confession as Christ himself; and the Superior as fulfilling the office of Mother of God.

* My lungs were also very sore in consequence of repeating the offices, so much so, that when present at recreation, when I had permission to speak, it gave me pain rather than pleasure. I have, since leaving the convent, consulted several physicians, who have expressed it as their opinion, that the cause of my bleeding at the lungs, which frequently occurs, was originally the repeating the office and other services, in *one long drawling tone*, which any one can know, by trying to be very difficult.

At my lesson in the afternoon, I again conversed with Mary Francis concerning the letter, and requested her to inform me how my happiness was concerned. She said still that the letter read to the community was a forged one; that Mrs. I. was her aunt and sincere friend; and did her father know her sufferings, and the treatment she received from the Superior, he would prosecute her; that she feared the Superior as she did a serpent. She then advised me not to bind myself after my three months' "test" or trial* to that order, by complying with the rules of "reception," any farther than would leave me at liberty to go to another if I chose; and I must not think, because they were wicked, that the inmates of all convents, were so. I assured her, that although I had thought that there was none good but Catholics, I now believed there were good and bad among all sects. She then requested me not to betray her, and told me the Superior intended to keep me there for life, and she thought it her duty to warn me of the snares laid for me. She disliked that order,† and wished me to inform her why, and in

* When persons *first* enter the convent, they take an obligation that they will spend the remainder of their days as a recluse, but they are put on a three months' "test," or trial, to see if they have a "vocation" for that particular order; if not, they are generally placed in another.

† Miss Mary Francis was educated, I believe, in the convent of Saint Joseph, Emmetsburg; also known as the order of the "Sisters of Charity." She possessed an amiable disposition and superior talents, and was universally admired by the inmates of the school; and so far as my acquaintance went, she was deserving the esteem of every one.

on, I again conversed
the letter, and re-
my happiness was
at the letter read to
ne; that Mrs. I. was
and did her father
treatment she receiv-
ould prosecute her;
s she did a serpent.
ind myself after my
l* to that order, by
reception," any far-
liberty to go to ano-
t not think, because
mates of all convents,
that although I had
good but Catholics, I
l and bad among all
e not to betray her,
ntended to keep me
ut it her duty to warn
e. She disliked that
orm her why, and in

e convent, they take an
the remainder of their
e put on a three months'
ava a "vocation" for that
re generally placed in an-

icated, I believe, in the
netsburg; also known as
arity." She possessed an
or talents, and was uni-
es of the school; and so
he was deserving the co-

what manner I had come there. I related to her then, and during the next afternoon, all the particulars. She appeared very much surprised to learn that my friends had been opposed to my coming, as the Superior had told her that they had put me there for life. She said she had been taken from the public apartment, because she had been seen weeping by the young ladies; that should the Superior refuse to let her go, she should, if possible, make her escape; and named a religieuse (Miss Mary Angela) who had made her escape before. She desired me, if she should be so fortunate as to make her escape, to ask, in private confession, permission to see my friends, and consult them about going to the "Sisters of Charity;" and if they were willing that I should go, she would procure me a situation, and by letter inform me of it. She was in great distress on account of that letter, which plainly unfolded the motives of the Superior. She said she should appear as calm as possible, as it was the only way to blind the eyes of the Superior, and enable her to escape; and requested me to give her all the information respecting the Superior's intention that I could learn, and to listen to her and to the Mother-assistant's conversation in recreation hours.

At recreation, the Superior observed that Miss Mary Francis had a vocation for a religious life, as she had *refused* to attend the offices and prayers. At our next interview, I inquired of Mary Francis if she had *refused* to attend prayers. She replied, no; that the Superior had discovered her intention to escape, and had *forbidden* her attending offices, communion, and confession, for exposing

her feelings before the religiense; and that the Superior had imposed penance upon her, forbidding her to walk in the garden during recreation; and that the presents given her by the young ladies had been, with the Superior's permission, taken by some one from her desk. She remarked, that we were exhorted to love and pray for those who spitefully use us, but she could not love the community generally, they exercised so much cruelty towards her; that the treatment she received was for no other reason than because she had given way to tears, which were a great relief to her. She was happy, she said, to find one who sympathized with her, and who would not treat her with contempt, as the others did. She said also, that the Superior had done wrong respecting her apparel.

I have now come to that part of my narrative in which I must again speak of the sufferings of sister Magdalene. One day she came from the refectory, and being so much exhausted as to be hardly able to ascend the stairs, I offered to assist her, and the Superior reprimanded me for it, saying, her weakness was feigned, and that my pity was false pity. She then said to sister Magdalene, after we were seated, in a tone of displeasure, if she did not make herself of use to the "community" she would send her back to Ireland. On which sister Mary Magdalene rose and said, "Mamere, I would like —"*. The Superior cut short what she was going to say by stamping upon the floor; and demanding who gave her permission to speak, imposed on her the penance of kissing the floor. The Superior,

* This, and other half-uttered expressions, convinced me that she wished to return to her friends.

use; and that the
upon her, forbidding
ing recreation; and
by the young ladies
permission, taken by
e remarked, that we
y for those who spite-
t love the community
uch cruelty towards
received was for no
ad given way to tears,
er. She was happy,
empathized with her,
with contempt, as the
hat the Superior had
pparel.

art of my narrative in
the sufferings of sis-
e came from the refec-
austed as to be hardly
ffered to assist her, and
ne for it, saying, her
hat my *pity* was false
r Magdalene, after we
pleasure, if she did not
community" she would
On which sister Mary
Mamere, I would like
ort what she was going
e floor; and demanding
speak, imposed on her
floor. The Superior,
ed expressions, convinced
o her friends.

after this, imposed hardships which she was hard-
ly able to sustain, frequently reminding her that
she had but a short time to work out her sal-
vation, and that she must do better if she did
not wish to serve in purgatory. The Superior
questioned me about my feelings—wished to know
why I looked so solemn. I told her I was ill from
want of *exercise*, that I was not accustomed to their
mode of living, &c. She said I must mention it to
my confessor, which I did.

The next time the Bishop visited us, he was in
unusually high spirits, and very sociable; and he
related several stories, which are not worthy of
notice in this place. He again asked sister Mag-
dalene when she thought of going to that happy
place, to receive her crown of glory. She replied
"Before the celebration of our divine Redeemer's
birth, my lord." He said she ought to be very
thankful that she was called so soon.

I will here relate a conversation of the Bishop
with the Superior at recreation hour, respecting
the Pope, &c. After talking a while in French, he
said he had received a long letter from the Pope,
in which his holiness congratulated him on his
success in establishing the true religion in the
United States, and made him offers of money to
advance the interest of the Catholic Church, and
more firmly establish it in America, &c. The
Bishop then spoke of the orthodox in Boston, and
said Dr. B. had got himself in a "hornet's nest,"
from which he could not extricate himself. The
Superior named a sermon delivered in the North
Church by an Episcopalian, and said they must
look out, or *they* would get themselves into a "hor-

net's nest." The Bishop mentioned a visit of Dr. O'F. at Dr. B's., and said Dr. O'F. had scarcely an opportunity to say a word, on account of the noise and crying of the children which were in the room, and with which Dr. B. was playing; said he appeared more engaged with the children than with the subjects of religion, &c., &c. Miss Mary John, the Mother-assistant, exclaimed "Is it possible, my Lord, that a man of God is treated in such a way by heretics?" "Yes," said the Bishop; "none but he that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord; but he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife." The Superior said Dr. B. possessed very little sense, and had a weak mind. The Bishop said that the doctor, by the course he had taken, had made many converts to Catholicism; "and perhaps," said the Superior, "he is a wicked instrument in the hands of God to bring about good."

At another time, while walking on the convent grounds, a cannon ball was picked up by one of the religieuses, and the Bishop taking it observed, as he gave it to the Superior, "Here is a British ball, that has killed many a Yankee;" and he also made several other similar observations. At another time, the Superior told the Bishop that two ladies met near the convent; the words she used were, "One Yankee met another, and said, 'I guess you are a going to independence.'" "I guess I be," said the other. Then they laughed heartily about it, and gave us permission to hold our recreation upon it. The Bishop remarked the Yan-

kees celebr
and appoi
celebrating
our of God

When I
she inquire
ings; and
she replied,
to see wor
friends? A
your friend
see you, wor
replied "Ye
very ill, and
Francis, hea
come to the
apparel, and
where the re
I had any go
not: but as
creation in th
then inform
the door, and
by pretending

* We all had
superior in the
a noise behind
the cause; the
were looking th
The Bishop had
ended from su
after any violen
would fall upon
upon a rock so
ave orders to t
over the ground

kees celebrated independence-day in honour of men, and *appointed* days of thanksgiving, instead of celebrating the birthday of the Redeemer, in honour of God, &c.*

When I was again summoned to the Superior, she inquired, as usual, into the state of my feelings; and when I said I desired to see my friends, she replied, "Why, my dear Agnes, do you wish to see *worldly* friends? Who do you call your friends? Am not I your friend? Is not the Bishop your friend? If your worldly friends wished to see you, would they not come and see you?" I replied "Yes." A few days after this I was taken very ill, and went to the infirmary. Miss Mary Francis, hearing of my illness, made an errand to come to the infirmary for some thread to mend her apparel, and pretending not to find it, asked me where the religieuse put it, and desired to know if I had any good news for her. I told her I had not: but as we had permission to assemble for recreation in the afternoon, I would, if I heard any, then inform her. At that instant a novice opened the door, and Miss Mary Francis excused herself by pretending that she was looking for the basket

* We all had permission at one time to walk with the Superior in the meditation garden. The Superior heard a noise behind the fence, and sent her servants to learn the cause; they returned, informing her that two men were looking through the fence. The Superior remarked, The Bishop had said there was great danger to be apprehended from such persons; that if Protestants were to offer any violence to them, the judgments of heaven would fall upon the wicked; and God had founded them upon a rock so firm that it could not fall. The Superior gave orders to the porters not to allow strangers to walk over the grounds without her or the Bishop's permission.

of thread. We were not so strictly watched for a few days as we had been ; but when Miss Mary Francis exposed her feelings one day before Miss Mary Magdalene and myself, we were again closely watched. I then asked the Superior's permission to write to my friends, and desire them to come and see me, which she granted ; and also told me to write whatever I pleased. I prepared a letter accordingly to my sister, stating that I did not wish to return to the world, but was anxious for a visit from them, &c.

I began now to be much dissatisfied with this convent. My views of retirement, however, were the same as ever, and I thought I would go to the order of the Sisters of Charity, where Miss Mary Francis was educated, as she had promised to introduce me there. She told me, that should I be called to the public apartments, as an assistant in ornamental work, if possible, to slip a billet into Miss I's. hand (a scholar from New York,) who would convey it to her ; and I must not open my mind to my confessor until I was sure she had left the community. I asked her if she would take a letter for me into the world ; she replied, she dare not, as the Superior would examine her, and not permit any thing to be carried from the convent into the world. We then laid the following plan, to mislead the Superior in regard to our intentions. Miss Mary Francis was to complain to the Superior that I would not give proper attention when at my lessons, and I was to tell her that I could not receive any benefit from Miss Mary Francis, on account of her grief and absence of mind. This was fulfilled to the letter. We also agreed on a signal

strictly watched for a
 at when Miss Mary
 one day before Miss
 we were again closely
 superior's permission
 desire them to come and
 and also told me to
 prepared a letter so-
 g that I did not wish
 as anxious for a visit

dissatisfied with this
 ement, however, were
 ight I would go to the
 ity, where Miss Mary
 e had promised to in-
 d me, that should I be
 ents, as an assistant in
 le, to slip a billet into
 from New York,) who
 ad I must not open my
 I was sure she had left
 er if she would take a
 ; she replied, she dare
 examine her, and not
 rried from the convent
 laid the following plan,
 regard to our intentions
 complain to the Superior
 er attention when at my
 er that I could not re-
 ss Mary Francis, on ac-
 cence of mind. This we
 e also agreed on a signal

by which I should know whether she was going
 with or without permission. If she went without
 permission, she was to tie a string round an old
 book, as if to keep the leaves together, and lay it
 upon the writing desk; if with permission, she
 was to make the sign of the cross three times upon
 her lips. I had intimated my desire to go with
 her; but she said it would be more prudent for me
 to endeavour to obtain the Superior's permission to
 see some of my friends, and I could then consult
 with them, and arrange matters to suit me. After
 our conversation, she knelt at the altar of the
 Blessed Virgin, and begged God to forgive us if we
 acted wrong in this matter; and said to me, "May
 we not hope for pardon in this matter, if the Supe-
 rior can be so wicked as to approach the holy of
 holies and yet receive absolution?" She then se-
 lected from a book the letters forming her real
 name, that I might write to her, should I not get
 an opportunity to give a letter to Miss I. A re-
 ligieuse entered, and whispered her to come away,
 and I never saw her afterwards.

When the Bishop next visited the "community,"
 he said he understood that they were rid of that
 person who had caused them so much trouble.
 They all then rejoiced because Miss Mary Francis
 had gone. The Bishop asked whither they had
 sent her. They answered, "to her friends." No-
 thing more at that time was said about it.

Not long after this, at private confession, I was
 questioned very particularly in regard to my views
 of remaining there for life. I told my confessor
 that I was convinced that the order was too austere
 for me, and then I burst into tears. He endea-

voured to comfort me, by saying I was not bound to *that* order for life; I could go to *another* order. I asked him if I might see my friends. He answered, "Yes." After receiving a promise from him that I should go to any other order I chose, I consented to take the *vows*. He gave me to understand, that I need take no other vows than I should at the convent of the Sisters of Charity. My reception took place the next day. I refused the white veil, because the Sisters of Charity did not wear it, and it was omitted. The choir was first darkened, and then lighted with wax tapers. The ceremony commenced with chants, prayers, responses, &c. A book was placed in my hands, which contained the vows I was to take. As near as I can recollect, the following is the substance of them;—

"O, Almighty and Everlasting God, permit me, a worm of the dust, to consecrate myself more strictly to thee this day, in presence of the most Holy Mother and Saint Ursula, and all of thy saints and martyrs, by living *two years* a *recluse*, and by instructing young ladies after the manner of Saint Ursula, and by taking upon myself her most holy vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience, which, with thy grace and assistance, I will fulfil."

They all responded "Amen," and repeated a long office in Latin. I still continued to wear the black garb,* which the Bishop blessed; also a long habit and a string of Rosary beads, which were also blessed by the Bishop. He wished to know one day, how Miss Mary Agnes did, after taking the

* The apparel of a religieuse is always kissed by the wearer, every time of putting on and taking off.

I was not bound to another order. My friends. He asking a promise from the order I chose, I gave me to under- vows than I should Charity. My re- day. I refused the of Charity did not The choir was first th wax tapers. The ants, prayers, respon- in my hands, which take. As near as I is the substance of

ting God, permit me, consecrate myself more presence of the most la, and all of thy saints ears a recluse, and by the manner of Saint myself her most holy and obedience, which, be, I will fulfil." men," and repeated a continued to wear the shop blessed; also a long y beads, which were also le wished to know one es did, after taking the se is always kissed by the on and taking off.

white vows; to which the Superior replied, "Very well." He then conversed about the establishment in Boston, and said that some Sisters of Charity were coming to constitute a convent either there or at Mount Benedict lower establishment.*

Meanwhile, sister Mary Magdalene was employed in the refectory. According to the Bishop, she was a saint, and he said there was a saint's body in the tomb (one of the late sisters) which remained undecayed. I heard the Superior, about this time, tell Miss Mary Magdalene to burn all her treasure,† she would suffer in purgatory for her self love, and she was afraid she did not suffer patiently, for she appeared romantic. Mary Magdalene fell prostrate at the Superior's feet, and said she would fulfil any command that should be laid upon her. The Superior gave her a penance, to kiss the feet of all the religiouses, and asked them to say an Ave and a Pater for her; after which, she lay prostrate in the refectory until the Angelus rung. One communion morning, as I rose and was dressing, I took some water as usual to rinse my mouth, and all at once Mary Magdalene appeared greatly agitated, and even in agony; made signs and crosses to signify that I should commit a sacrilege were I then to approach the communion; and I then recollected that nothing must be taken into the mouth on the morning before this sacrament. I relate this to show the state of her mind. The Superior

* The Bishop, in confession, told me I could, if I preferred it, become one of these sisters.

† The treasures consisted of written prayers, books, papers, a lock of her mother's hair, &c., which she brought from Ireland, and kept in her desk.

one day requested the Mother-assistant to get the keys of the tomb, and to have a good place prepared for Mary Magdalene, who forced a smile, saying, she should prefer her's near the undecayed saint's bed.

As time passed on, the Superior became more severe in her treatment, because I objected to pursue my music. My mind had been in such an unhappy state, that I for a long time found it impossible to study: and further, I did not wish to receive instruction, for I had determined not to stay there. I therefore succeeded in obtaining the Superior's permission to occupy my time chiefly with the needle, and assured her that I would again study when I felt better.

On one of the holy-days the Bishop came in, and after playing upon his flute, addressed the Superior, styling her Mademoiselle, and wished to know if Mary Magdalene wanted to go to her long home. The Superior beckoned to her to come to them, and she approached on her knees. The Bishop asked her if she felt prepared to die. She replied, "Yes, my Lord; but, with the permission of our Mother, I have one request to make." They told her to say on. She said she wished to be anointed before death, if his lordship thought her worthy of so great a favour. He said, "Before I grant your request, I have one to make, that is, that you will implore the Almighty to send down from heaven a bushel of *gold*, for the purpose of establishing a college for young men on Bunker Hill." He said he had bought the land for that use, and that all the sisters who had died had promised to present his request, but had not fulfilled their obligations;

assistant to get the
a good place pre-
who forced a smile,
near the undecayed

superior became more
I objected to pur-
been in such an un-
time found it impos-
did not wish to re-
etermined not to stay
in obtaining the Su-
ny time chiefly with
that I would again

Bishop came in, and
addressed the Supe-
, and wished to know
go to her long home.
to come to them, and

The Bishop asked
She replied, "Yes,
ission of our Mother,
' They told her to
to be anointed before
ht her worthy of so
Before I grant your
that is, that you will
d down from heaven a
ose of establishing a
nker Hill." He said
hat use, and that all
promised to present
lled their obligations;

"and," says he, "you must shake hands in heaven
with all the sisters who have gone, and be sure and
ask them why they have not fulfilled their pro-
mise, for I have *waited long enough*; and con-
tinue to chant your office with us while here on
earth, which is the sweet communion of saints."
After she had given her pledge, and *kissed his*
feet, he told the several members of the commu-
nity to think of what they should like best. I was
first called to make my request. I had never seen
any thing of this kind before, and my feelings were
such as I cannot describe; and continuing silent,
the Superior bade me name it. I then said I lack-
ed humility, and should wish for that virtue. The
religiuses then made their requests: one asked
for grace to fulfil the vow of poverty; another, for
obedience; a third, more fervent love for the Mo-
ther of God; a fourth, more devotion to a patron
saint; a fifth, more devotion in approaching the
altar and host; and so on. The Superior ended
it by making the same request as the Bishop, add-
ing, the purpose intended was that the Gospel of
our Lord and Saviour might be more extensively
propagated, and all dissenters might be made to
turn to the true Church, and believe. The con-
versation then turned upon the Pope, and the
Bishop said the Pope would, perhaps, before long,
visit this country; and when things were more
improved, and his new church finished, he should
write to the Pope, &c. He went into a relation of
some parts of ecclesiastical history; spoke of the
Pope's being the vicegerent of Christ on earth;
and that although the wicked one prevailed now,
it was designed for good, and the time would come

when all would look to the Pope as their spiritual director on earth. He thought that America rightfully belonged to the Pope, and that his Holiness would take up his residence here at some future day.

Not long after this, Mary Magdalene was anointed for death, and took her vows for life, but she continued to wear the white veil. I thought it singular that Mary Magdalene should at that time take her *black vows*, as they called them, because, as I learned in the community, she had not been there a *year*; and her wearing the *white veil* after taking them, appeared still more singular.

I will endeavour to give some idea of the manner in which she took her vows, and of the anointing. After she had retired to her couch,* the religiouses walked to the room in procession. Sister St. Clair had a wax taper blazing at her feet, and the Superior knelt at her head with the vows, which were copied on a half sheet of paper. The Bishop then came in with both sacraments, all of us prostrating as he passed. After putting the tabernacle upon the little altar, which had been placed there for the purpose, he read from a book a great many prayers, all of us responding. He asked her a number of questions about renouncing the world, which she answered. The Superior gave her the vows, and after pronouncing them, she was anointed; sister Clair laying bare her neck and feet, which the Bishop crossed with holy

* I learned that the usual custom was to place them in a black coffin, covered with a black pall when they were to take the *black vows*; but in this instance it was omitted.

as their spiritual
night that America
e, and that his Holi-
ence here at some

Magdalene was anoint-
ws for life, but she
veil. I thought it
e should at that time
called them, because,
y, she had not been
g the *white veil* after
ore singular.

me idea of the man-
ws, and of the anoint-
o her couch,* the re-
in procession. Sister
zing at her feet, and
head with the vows,
sheet of paper. The
th sacraments, all of
d. After putting the
altar, which had been
he read from a book
f us responding. He
ions about renouncing
vered. The Superior
er pronouncing them,
Clair laying bare her
shop crossed with holy

tom was to place them in
black pall when they were
in this instance it was

off, at the same time repeating Latin. He then
gave her the *viaticum*, and ended the ceremony as
he commenced, with saying mass, and passed out,
we all prostrating.

She lived rather longer than was expected, but
her penances were not remitted. She would fre-
quently kneel and prostrate all night long in the
cold infirmary, saying her rosary and other pen-
ances, one or two of which I will mention. She
wore next her heart a metallic plate, in imitation of
a crown of thorns, from which I was given to un-
derstand she suffered a sort of martyrdom. This
I often saw her kiss, and lay on the altar of the
crucifix as she retired. Another penance was, the
reclining upon a mattress more like a table than a
bed.

A day or two after this, the Superior, Mother-
assistant, and Mary Benedict, ridiculed the appear-
ance of Mary Magdalene, because of the dropsy,
which prevented her appearing graceful, and be-
cause she was disappointed in not going to heaven
sooner. The Superior gave her some linen capes
to make, and said, "Do you think you shall stay
with us long enough to do these, sister?" She
took them, and said, "Yes, Mamere, I thank you?"
Notwithstanding the Superior's severity, she some-
times appeared affectionate. One day I failed in
keeping the observances at the usual time. I met
the Superior, and fearing she would punish me, I
burst into tears. She embraced me very affection-

* She would often ask permission to take a little water,
as she was very thirsty; the Superior always refused it;
but still the obedient Magdalene replied, "Mamere, I
thank you."

ately, and wiped my face with a handkerchief, and said I should not be punished that time. She once told me I might sit at meditation hour, instead of kneeling, as it was very tiresome. She frequently called me *her holy innocent*, because she said I kept the rules of the order, and was persevering in my vocation as a *recluse*. She said I should see my friend Mrs. G. before long; but I did not see her while I was there.

While in the convent, I asked once or twice for a Bible, but never received any, and never saw one while there. The Bishop often said that the laity were not qualified to expound the scriptures, and that the *successors* of the apostles *alone* were authorized to interpret them, &c.

The Bishop, in one of his visits, spoke particularly of the cholera. He told us we must watch and pray more fervently or "the old Scratch would snatch us off with the cholera." It was recreation hour, but Mary Magdalene was at work in the refectory. When she came to the community, she appeared like a person in spasms; she tried to say "Ave Maria," and immediately fainted. We were all very much alarmed. At that moment the bell called us to the choir for visitation and vespers. When I retired, I felt much hurt to see Mary Magdalene in the cold infirmary, but did not dare to express my feelings. Next day, at recreation, the Superior, Mother-assistant, and Mrs. Mary Benedict, made a short visit to Mary Magdalene, and on returning they told us she was better, and in a spiritual sense well; for she had refused taking her portion, or any thing eatable, as she did not wish to nourish her body, because the will of God.

a handkerchief, and shed that time. She meditation hour, in- very tiresome. She *poly innocent*, because the order, and was per- *recluse*. She said I before long; but I there.

asked once or twice for any, and never saw one often said that the laity and the scriptures, and postles *alone* were su- &c.

is visits, spoke particu- told us we must watch "the old Scratch would era." It was recreation was at work in the re- to the community, she spasms; she tried to m- iately fainted. We were At that moment the bell of visitation and vespers ch hurt to see Mary Mag- ary, but did not dare to xt day, at recreation, the t, and Mrs. Mary Bene- Mary Magdalene, and o- she was better, and in she had refused taking eatable, as she did not, because the will of God

had been made known to her in a vision. We all had the promise of conversing with her, but we were so constantly employed in our various offices, that we had no leisure.

The next day, it being my turn to see that all the vessels which contained holy water were filled, &c. I had an opportunity of looking at Mary Magdalene. Her eyes were partly open, and her face was purple; she lay pretty still. I did not dare to speak to her, supposing she would think it a duty to tell of it, as it would be an infraction of the rules. The next night I lay thinking of her, when I was suddenly startled, hearing a rattling noise, as I thought, in her throat. Very soon sister Martha (the sick lay nun) arose, and coming to her said, "Jesus! Mary! Joseph! receive her soul!" and rang the bell three times. The spirit of the gentle Magdalene had departed. The Superior came, bringing a lighted wax taper, which she placed in the hand of the deceased. She closed the eyes, and placed a crucifix on the breast. Sister Martha had whispered us to rise, and the Superior, observing my agitation, said, "Be calm, and join with us in prayer: *she is a happy soul.*" I melted accordingly, repeating the litany, until the clock struck two, when we all assembled in the choir, in which was a fire and wax taper burning. After meditation, matins, lauds, and prayers, and a *novena* (a particular supplication,) that our requests might be granted, we assembled for diet, and for the first time we had some toasted bread. We also

The bell was struck *three* times to call the Superior, *once* to call the Mother-assistant, and *once* to call Mrs. Mary Benedict.

had recreation granted in the time of silence. The Superior sent for us, and instructed us how to appear at the burial of our sister Mary Magdalene, and accompanied us to view her corpse. She was laid out in the habit of a professed nun, in a black veil; her hands were tied together, and her vows placed in them. The Superior remarked that this was done by the Bishop's request. At the evening recreation the Bishop appeared in high spirits, and rejoiced that so happy a soul had at last arrived in heaven; and commenced the "*Dies illæ*," on the piano-forte, accompanied by the voices of the others. He told me I should have Miss Mary Magdalene for my intercessor, for she was to be canonized. The Mother Superior permitted me to embrace the sisters, and gave me the Mother-assistant for my *Mother*. She then presented us with the relics of saints, that by their means we might gain indulgences. She mentioned a "retreat" as being necessary for our perseverance in a religious life.

The second day after this, the coffin was placed in the choir, and the funeral services were performed in the following manner: Dr. O'Flaherty sang the office, while the Bishop chanted it. Father Taylor officiated at the altar. Four or five of the altar boys were present, and dressed in altar robes, &c.; two of them held wax tapers, a third holy water, a fourth a crucifix. One swung incense in the censor over the corpse, and another, at the same time, sprinkled holy water upon it. We performed our part by saying the "*Dies illæ*." The coffin* was then carried to the tomb by two Irish

* My feelings were much hurt to witness the manner in

men. The singing, a crucifix. of the y while the After dep clergy retir recreation, subjects. libera and be omitted, had gone were permit &c.

At the ne visited us, a ed on his fl and the Sup spirits.

Having or I had until Mary Franc grew discon saying I w wished to k isliking it, nents; and now what l ed me if it v cess and dea No, not th

which the lid the corpse ha he coffin.

men. The Bishop, priests, and others followed, singing, and carrying lighted tapers and a large crucifix. The corpse was also followed by some of the young ladies from the public schools, while the religieuses remained in the convent. After depositing the coffin in the tomb, the clergy retired to dinner. We were permitted, at recreation, to hear the clergy converse on various subjects. The Superior told us that the customary libera and prayers for faithful souls departed might be omitted, as the Bishop said Magdalene's soul had gone immediately to heaven. The novices were permitted to relate visions of guardian angels, &c.

At the next evening recreation, the Bishop again visited us, and appeared in very good spirits, played on his flute, and sung. He soon went away, and the Superior said he only came to cheer up our spirits.

Having only a few minutes to stay at confession, I had until this time kept the secret of my friend Mary Francis; but the Bishop perceiving that I grew discontented, endeavoured to comfort me, by saying I was not *bound* to that order; but he wished to know more particularly my reasons for disliking it, and began to threaten me with judgments; and observing my agitation, said he *must* know what lay so heavily on my mind. He asked me if it was any thing connected with the sickness and death of Mary Magdalene. I told him, No, not that in particular; I do not like the Su-

which the lid of the coffin was *forced* down to its place. The corpse had swollen much, and become too large for the coffin.

perior." He said I must tell him instantly all the wicked thoughts that had disturbed my mind, and asked me various improper questions, the meaning of which I did not *then* understand, and which I decline mentioning. I was so confused, that I inadvertently spoke Mary Francis's name, and begged his pardon for listening to her; and he immediately exclaimed, "Ah! I know all; confess to me what she told you, and do not dare to deceive me; you cannot deceive God." I told him *nearly* all that had passed between Mary Francis and myself. He said that Mary Francis was not a fit subject for any order, and they were obliged to send her away; that she was deranged, and I had done very wrong in listening to an insane person. He said I could not go to the order she mentioned, and that I would be more happy with the Sisters of Charity, who were coming to reside there. He said that worldlings hated me for the good part I had chosen, and would ridicule me should I go back to the world, and then repeated some scripture texts. I still persisted in saying it was my determination not to remain in that order, and told him I disliked the Superior; and he gave me a penance to perform. I was desirous at that time to have them think me obedient, or I should not have condescended to such humiliation. My motive was *prudence*, not want of courage, for by this time I had become disgusted with the life I led, and their manner of proceeding.

The next time the Bishop was with us, he requested me to sing any favourite tune I chose. I sang the "Ode on Science," which every one knows, is highly patriotic. At the close of the

first stanza, the Superior but not und had made s was evident then recalle offensive.

One day t lay so heavil ant had prev examination replying, I w though true, left me, but i community b at recreation there was not deavoured to trusted I had diet in the re kind that I h several balls a nutmeg, of were I never diet, and stro

A few days her trunk wa might exami those she con to each one Joseph, sist he had com after her des

first stanza, he spoke a few words in French to the Superior, who made a signal for me to stop; but not understanding her I continued until she had made several signals, when I perceived she was evidently displeased with my singing, and then recalled the words which I supposed were offensive.

One day the Superior asked me what it was that lay so heavily on my mind, as the Mother-assistant had previously found me in tears while at our examination of conscience. I excused myself by replying, I was thinking of my dear mother, (which, though true, was not the cause of my grief.) She then left me, but not without distrust, the eyes of the community being upon me. The next time we met at recreation, one of them remarked, she hoped there was not another *Judas* among them. I endeavoured to betray no emotion, but they still mistrusted I had other views; for, while sitting at my diet in the refectory, I observed my food was of a kind that I had never seen before. It consisted of several balls of a darkish colour, about the size of a nutmeg, of a bitter astringent taste; what they were I never knew. I ate them as I did my other diet, and strove to exhibit no fearful sensations.

A few days after the death of Mary Magdalene, her trunk was brought forward, that the Superior might examine it, and distribute its contents to those she considered the most worthy. She gave to each one some little relic, and to Miss Mary Joseph, sister to Magdalene, some letters which she had composed to be read, as the Superior said, after her death. They were quite affecting, and

caused Mary Joseph to weep much, for which the Superior reprimanded her.

Some day after this, the Superior sent for me to practise music, and then made a signal for me to follow her into the Bishop's room. This room is separated from the others by shutters, with curtains drawing on the chapel side. When I had kissed her feet, she desired to know why I cried at my practice in the choir. I rather imprudently answered, "I could not tell; I did not cry much." (It then struck me, she could not have seen me, as I was *alone*.) I said I was very cold,* particularly my feet; and I had been practising "Blue-eyed Mary," and was affected by the words. She said that what I asserted was false, and commanded me to tell her the true cause, *in a moment*; and pulling the handkerchief from my hand, she bade me kneel and tell her at once, or I should be punished. I was so frightened by the threats and manner of the Superior, that I sobbed aloud, and blood gushed from my nose and mouth. She then seized and shook me by the arm, and seated me, saying, "Hush! be calm, or the young ladies may hear you as they pass the door to go to their practice." She asked me again and again to tell her why I shed tears in the choir, and why I felt such a repugnance to communicate my thoughts. I replied, because I had made a *promise* not to tell, and I could not break it. The Superior turned pale, but suppressing her feelings, bade me break that promise directly, and asked to whom I had made it. I replied I could not tell any one but my confessor.

* The rooms were seldom comfortably warmed, and at times I suffered much from the cold.

Says she,
not obey
will stand
seat. To
Mary Mag
asked me
content in
began to w
me, saying
I opened m
her words
me by the
me to unfo
mother; a
stay by me
grief, that
balm, &c.
my friends
was nothing
asked me if
of God my
said one pe
my sister, a
She also me
my sister, a
"wipe her

* I learnt
vent she and
to my sister
could be seen
and asked he
out, and soon
were not per
sister told he
and she could

Says she, embracing me, "What! my dear sister, not obey your Superior?—tell me, my dear, and I will stand *responsible* for you before the judgment-seat. To whom did you make the promise?—to Mary Magdalene or Mary Francis?" She also asked me if I had related all the causes of my discontent in confession. I replied, "Not all," and began to weep again. She endeavoured to console me, saying, she could not heal my wounds unless I opened my whole feelings to her; and comparing her words to those of our divine Redeemer, took me by the hand, and with seeming affection, told me to unfold all my feelings to her, as to an own mother; and said she should think it her duty to stay by me until I should relate the cause of my grief, that she might pour into my heart a heavenly balm, &c. I told her I had not seen or heard from my friends, to whom I had written. She said that was nothing to the point; she was my friend; and asked me if I called persons who insulted the house of God my friends. I replied, "No." She then said one person had been there who called herself my sister, and who threw pebbles at the convent. She also mentioned another person, who came with my sister, and whom she said she would not take to "*wipe her feet on.*"* After making this observa-

* I learnt from my sister, that while I was in the convent she and another young lady went there to invite me to my sister M's wedding. She asked the portress if I could be seen at that hour, who replied she would see, and asked her to walk in, inquired her name, &c., went out, and soon returned with the answer that the scholars were not permitted to come to the parlour that day. My sister told her it was important that she should see me, and she could not come away without. The portress left

tion, she left me for a few moments to compose myself. Returning, she asked if I knew where I was, and if I had concluded to obey her, or break my vows of obedience, and be *severely* punished. I answered, "No, Mamere, I will tell all I can remember;" for I judged from her threats and looks that I should be confined in a cellar, or have something more severe than usual inflicted upon me; the rules of the order also led me to think so. But notwithstanding my fears of the Superior, I still kept secret the real name of Miss Mary Francis, and her promise of writing to Mrs. G. or my friends

the room, returned, closed the shutters, retired, and presently the Superior entered, walking between two servants, and made signs for my sister to approach, inquiring her and the other lady's names, and their business. On being informed, she mentioned that I could not be seen, but she would deliver any message my sister desired; that the young ladies never violated the rules for the sake of seeing company, and that I did not wish to see any worldly friends, or have any communication with them; that my mind was wholly occupied with heavenly things; that I was perfectly happy, and "*growing as fat as butter*;" that I was fast improving in my studies, learning music, and drawing, (untrue.) In consequence of my sister's weeping, and desiring her to name a time when I could be seen, the Superior said she would go and inquire whether I desired to see her. The Superior soon returned, and told my sister that I did not wish to see her, or any worldly relative; but the Superior told her that if I chose I could come to the wedding. They both left the Convent with the impression that I was a public scholar, and could leave when I chose; and thought it passing strange that I should refuse to see them, as I had, before going to the Convent, requested them to visit me. My sister imagined that I had become so infatuated with the Catholic religion as to lose all sisterly affection for those who were averse to it, and went away weeping.

respecti
for a wh
that our
taught u
quainted
cause wh
have us
could ha
which I
Bishop.
with Mar
could hav
was neve
secrets by
to be mis
ed, and th
so much
reason of
that every
could not
fessor. I
follow, as
vice of Ma
friend.
I felt a
the world,
a person r
in the way
society.
taking thi
seclusion v
solved to
Mary Fran
undetermi

respecting my situation. She then dismissed me for a while. But my thoughts soon whispered me that our "*Ghostly Father*" (as our Directory taught us to call him) had made the Superior acquainted with what passed in secret confession, because without such knowledge she never could have used such threatening language, and never could have been displeased, as she was, at words which I used in secret confession *alone* with the Bishop. She asked me how I dared to converse with Mary Francis on the slate. Now, she never could have known this, only from the Bishop. I was never fully aware of their arts, in getting secrets by confession, until they became too visible to be misunderstood. I then became more reserved, and the Superior remarked that I did not show so much frankness or manner as formerly; the reason of which the reader will understand to be, that every eye was on me. A different course I could not adopt, having lost *confidence* in my confessor. I did not follow his advice, but resolved to follow, as nearly as I could conscientiously, the advice of Mary Francis, being confident she was my friend.

I felt a repugnance at the idea of returning to the world, supposing that many would believe me a person romantic and visionary, and inexperienced in the ways of the world, and therefore unfit for society. And I was also particularly averse to taking this step, because of the solemn promise of seclusion which I had taken. Nevertheless, I resolved to leave that convent, and to write Miss Mary Francis from my friend Mrs. G's., but was undetermined whether I should return to the world.

I had reason to think that my letters were never sent to my friends, and determined to convey one privately. I stole a few moments, and hastily wrote some lines with my pencil, and hid them behind the altar ; but the billet was discovered, and I never heard from it.

It was my turn that week to read as "lectress." A book was placed before me in the refectory, called "Rules of St. Augustine," and the place marked to read was concerning a religious receiving letters clandestinely. I could not control my feelings, for what I read was very affecting. At this time we were directed to remain in the refectory, instead of assembling in the community, and told to repeat "Hail Mary" before a picture. The Superior and Mother-assistant consented to have me practise music no more during the cold weather. They also permitted me to wear warmer clothing.

One day, as I was sitting alone in the refectory in the time of silence, the Superior came in, and after kneeling and extending her arms in the form of a cross, she kissed the floor, and rising, walked towards the door ; returning she seated herself on the bench beside me. I asked her if I should bring a chair ; she answered, "No," and inquired how I felt, and why I changed colour while at the table. I replied that my mouth was very sore, and it hurt me to read. She wished to know what made my mouth sore. I told her I thought it was something I had eaten. She said, *laughingly*, it was the canker, and asked if it was not sent as a judgment for some sin. I replied that I did not know ; I had not felt very well for some days, and

though
She th
room a
time, c
sisters
a mach
ironing
with so
prepare
of the l
rowly ;
convers
watched
great va
make m
sible.
day of r
bration
passed h
ed at it
appeared
permissi
luxury a
the term
from pu
conversa
pers of
person
thirty y
The M
said it v
which o
unfit to
disciplin

were never
convey one
and hastily
and them be-
vered, and

lecturess."
refectory,
and the place
house receiv-
control my
fecting. At
n the refec-
community, and
picture. The
ted to have
e cold wea-
year warmer

the refectory
came in, and
s in the form
ising, walked
ed herself on
if I should
and inquired
r while at the
very sore, and
to know what
thought it was
laughingly, it
not sent as a
that I did not
come days, and

thought it was partly owing to want of exercise. She then sent sister Martha to conduct me into a room at the farther part of the convent, for the first time, called a "*mangle room*." There were some sisters there kneeling in devotion, and one turning a machine used for pressing clothes, instead of ironing them, called a *mangle*. She presented me with some altar laces, and told me to have them prepared for the altar the next day at the ringing of the bell. While there I was watched very narrowly; but as I had gathered from the Superior's conversation, at different times, that the gates were watched by the porters and dogs, which were of great value to the convent, I did not dare, then, to make my escape, but appeared as cheerful as possible. The sisters appeared very happy, it being a day of recreation in the community, and the celebration of some great saint. The Superior, as she passed her portrait, remarked, that she never looked at it but that it reminded her of smiling. She appeared in unusually good spirits, and gave us permission to wish each other happy feasts, not of luxury and feasting, in the common acceptance of the terms, but of prayers to the saints to free us from purgatory. In the course of the Superior's conversation, she said she had read in the newspapers of a new law which had been passed that no person who was under the age of twenty-eight or thirty years should be allowed to keep any school. The Mother-assistant approved of this law, and said it was good, as it would remove the difficulty which overseers had with young teachers who were unfit to take charge of a school, particularly the discipline.

I would here confess my fault (if a fault it was) of not acknowledging all my obligations in secret confession, and of *pretending* to think Mary Francis deranged; and also of acquiescing in the Superior's commands in her presence with feigned humility. I did this, that my design should not be suspected.

A letter was read to the community, that was addressed to the Superior, from Bishop P. of Emmetsburgh. In it he rejoiced to learn that the "community" was set free of *that person* who was deranged, and whose disposition he had known to his sorrow from her youth. He lamented the departure of Magdalene, who no doubt was a saint reigning in glory, after what she had been willing to suffer to gain Salvation.* I was sent for to attend to the Superior in the Bishop's room, after mass. She was folding his cassock and robe. When I entered, she bade me do as my directory taught, and said I had let *trifles* make an impression upon me, and weak minds only allowed trifles to affect them. Giving me the letter, she bade me tell her what I thought of it. I read it, and said, I could not believe what Mary Francis had told me, if she were deranged, but yet I had rather go to the convent where she was educated than stay at that on Mount Benedict. She asked me if I thought of going without protection. I begged of her to let me see some of my friends *there*, or permit me to return to the world. After saying she had sent

* Since leaving the convent, I have written to Miss Mary Francis for information in regard to this letter, but have received no satisfactory answer. I have, however, received from her three sisters.

my le
could
trouble
and I c

One
choir r
monthl
commu
tended
remain
they w
confess
wish to
languag
eral "im
came in
and I w
the Mo
office.

if I kn
whether

* My f
I can
I was at
asked me
which I
I will
as I neve
able to j
lay relig
ed the po
rather t
wicked.
lodged in
she, as d
night.
kneeling

my letters* to my friends, who, if they wished, could come there and see me, she told me not to trouble myself, for the Bishop would soon be there, and I could talk with him about it.‡

One Sabbath after mass, while we were in the choir repeating the examination of conscience or monthly review, I was called in a whisper into the community with the rest of the sisters, but pretended not to hear. The others went in while I remained. I heard the Bishop speak to them as they went in; but I had absented myself from confession and communion that day, and did not wish to see the Bishop on account of his previous language. After the doors had been opened several times, one of the religiouses (sister Martha)† came in and knelt with me. The bell then rang, and I went into the refectory, waiting as usual for the Mother-assistant's instructions in the Latin office. Sister Martha soon entered, and asked me if I knew where the Mother-assistant was, and whether I had been in the community since mass.

* My friends never received any letter from me.

‡ I cannot remember all that passed in confession, for I was at this time much confused; however, the Bishop asked me how I should like to go to a convent in Canada, which I objected to.

† I will not presume to say much about sister Martha, as I never conversed with her, and therefore was not so able to judge of her sufferings, &c. She was a professed lay religious, and I believe an American. She was called the portress, and one of those, I learned, who chose rather to be a door-keeper than to dwell among the wicked. She, together with three of the choir religiouses, lodged in the infirmary with me. While she slept there, she, as did Magdalene, coughed at intervals during the night. Sister Martha often approached the Superior kneeling and weeping.

I replied, No, but was waiting for the Mother-assistant. After saying office, I went down to the refectory to string some rosary beads, and afterwards returned to the choir, where the novices were telling their beads. The Superior came in to join in devotion, and remained until diet. As we were proceeding to diet, I accidentally *touch*ed the Superior; she looked at me, and appeared much displeased. At recreation the religieuses were very desirous to learn the state of my mind. I strove to appear unembarrassed, and answered their questions with seeming ignorance. I was not censured for my transgression of the rules, nor was any remark made upon it.

In the evening we were permitted to sit in the community, which had been warmed. After repeating the offices, and during the time of silence, a dog barked in front of the community, and we heard a noise like some one thumping upon the doors. The religieuses fell down before the altar and appeared much frightened. I kept my seat, but at that moment heard the window raised, and the Superior ask who was there. No answer was made to her inquiry. I then felt somewhat alarmed, but endeavoured to betray as little fear as possible. What this noise was, or for what reason it was made, I never could learn, but I have supposed it was done to see if I was easily alarmed. The like had several times occurred.

About this time the martyrologies of some saints were read at table; also the history of saints who had been tempted by Satan. Perhaps it may be well to relate one or two. A certain saint, who was strongly tempted by Satan, retired to a desert,

and confined for him to live purposes. time, he pr thirst, which brought him and he return more trouble

Some nob monk, who v with them o he made the They asked threatened h them if they might pray, the meat, h minutes that off the plate sat down an spired man.

Many acc were so disa not attempt

As severa thing conce little I know of the room those before ments, excep perior and E cation, the y mitted to vi

and confined himself to a cell scarcely large enough for him to lie at ease. He retired here for pious purposes. After mortifying his body for a long time, he prayed for rain that he might quench his thirst, which was granted: for a bird came and brought him food, which renewed his strength, and he returned to his monastery and was never more troubled with the temptations of Satan.

Some noblemen once invited a poor wandering monk, who was begging for the monastery, to dine with them on Friday. They helped him to meat; he made the sign of the cross, refusing to eat it. They asked the reason; and drawing their swords, threatened his life unless he did eat it. He told them if they would allow him a few minutes that he might pray, and give him a pewter plate to cover the meat, he would eat it. After praying a few minutes that the meat might become fish, he took off the plate, and behold it was fish; and he then sat down and ate, and they believed him an inspired man.

Many accounts of those who had become saints were so disagreeable and even revolting, that I will not attempt to relate or describe them.

As several of my friends desire to learn something concerning the scholars, I will relate what little I know. I never had permission to enter any of the rooms in the recluse apartments, except those before named, and never to the public apartments, except on examination days, when the Superior and Bishop were present. During one vacation, the young ladies who remained were permitted to visit the community to give the members

presents.* I never spoke to them but to thank them for a present. They were sometimes at vacation permitted to enter the community and embrace the religieuses.

Complaints were often brought to the Superior while at recreation, and sometimes repeated aloud. They were generally violations of the *rules*, which were very strict. They were sometimes punished for refusing to say prayers to the saints, which they said their parents disapproved of: also for refusing to read Roman Catholic history. A Miss T., of C., was brought to the Superior, and reprimanded for writing her discontents to her friends. The Superior destroying one half the letter, and gave me the blank leaf to write a prayer on. Another was reprimanded severely because she had said to the other young misses, she should be glad when the time came for her to leave the convent, &c. The Superior, shaking her severely, obliged her to kneel and perform an act of contrition by kissing the floor, and saying that she was very sorry that she had offended her teachers, and begged the forgiveness of all.

Some of the young ladies were apparently great favourites of the Superior and Bishop. They sometimes sent for them to bestow presents and caress them. One young lady, of whom the Bishop was guardian, was treated very ill. I often saw her in tears, and once heard the teacher tell the Superior that it was because she had no dress suitable to wear when she went into the world to see her

* Although we received presents, we were not allowed to keep them.

to them but to thank
were sometimes at va-
the community and em-

brought to the Superior
sometimes repeated aloud.
ions of the *rules*, which
re sometimes punished
to the saints, which
approved of: also for
tholic history. A Miss
he Superior, and reprim-
contents to her friends.
one half the letter, and
write a prayer on. An-
verely because she had
sses, she should be glad
to leave the convent,
g her severely, obliged
an act of contrition by
ying that she was very
her teachers, and beg-

s were apparently great
er and Bishop. They
to bestow presents and
ady, of whom the Bishop
very ill. I often saw her
e teacher tell the Super-
e had no dress suitable
o the world to see her

enta, we were not allowed

friends. She was designed, as I learned, to be a
teacher in a convent in Canada.

A number of the young ladies were unhappy,
whose names I have forgotten. I learned that
they disliked the discipline.

After this, the Superior was sick of the influenza,
and I did not see her for two or three days. I at-
tended to my offices as usual, such as preparing
the wine and the water, the chalice, host, holy wa-
ter, and vestments, &c. One day, however, I had
forgotten to attend to this duty at the appointed
hour, but recollecting it, and fearing lest I should
offend the Superior by reason of negligence, I ask-
ed permission to leave the room, telling a novice
that our Mother had given me permission to attend
to it; she answered, "O yes, sister, you can go
then." I went immediately to the chapel, and was
arranging things for mass, which was to take place
the next day. While busily employed, I heard the
adjoining door open, and the Bishop's voice dis-
tinctly. Being conscious that I was there at the
wrong hour, I kept as still as possible, lest I should
be discovered. While in this room, I overheard
the following conversation between the Bishop and
Superior:—The Bishop, after taking snuff in his
usual manner, began by saying—"Well, well, what
does Agnes say? how does she appear?" I heard
distinctly from the Superior in reply, that "Ac-
cording to all appearances, she is either possessed
of *insensibility* or great *self-command*." The
Bishop walked about the room, seeming much dis-
pleased with the Superior, and cast many severe
and improper reflections upon Mary Francis, who,
it was known, had influenced me; all which his

lordship will well remember, He then told the Superior that the establishment was in its infancy, and that it would not do to have such reports go abroad as these persons would carry; that Agnes must be taken care of; that they had better send her to Canada, and that a carriage could cross the line in two or three days. He added, by way of repetition, that it would not do for the Protestants to get hold of those things and make another "fuss." He then gave the Superior instructions how to entice me into the carriage, and they soon both left the room, and I heard no more.

The reader may judge of my feelings at this moment: a young and inexperienced female, shut out from the world, and entirely beyond the reach of friends: threatened with speedy transportation to another country, and involuntary confinement for life, with no power to resist the immediate fulfilment of the startling conspiracy I had overheard. It was with much difficulty that I controlled my feelings; but aware of the importance of not betraying any knowledge of what had taken place, I succeeded in returning to the refectory unsuspected. I now became firmly impressed, that unless I could contrive to break away from the convent soon, it would be for ever too late; and that every day I remained rendered my escape more difficult.

The next day I went to auricular confession, not without trembling and fear lest I should betray myself; but having committed my case to God, I went somewhat relieved in my feelings. At a previous confession I had refused to go to Canada; but at this time, in reply to the Bishop's inquiry, I answered that I would consider the subject; for I

thought I especially not alter appeared of an i

It was the officer in my th swallow, being wh recreation that I cou and was t

They v my feelin endeavour had left n escape fro so the fir

I was i had oftan ing aroun praying t some wor a handker served, to ache, and not well, posed, sy things oc I shall pa But wh

* I have who says it

then told the
s in its infancy,
uch reports go
y; that Agnes
ad better send
could cross the
led, by way of
the Protestants
make another
for instructions
and they soon
more.

lings at this mo-
d female, shut
yond the reach
transportation
ry confinement
immediate ful-
had overheard.
controlled my
nce of not be-
taken place, I
tory unsuspect-
d, that unless I
m the convent
and that every
more difficult
confession, not
should betray
case to God, I
feelings. At
o go to Canada;
hop's inquiry, I
subject; for I

thought it wrong to evince any want of fortitude, especially when I had so much need of it. I did not alter my course of conduct, fearing that if I appeared perfectly contented, I should be suspected of an intention to escape.

It was my turn during that week to officiate in the offices. While reading I felt something rise in my throat, which two or three times I tried to swallow, but it still remained. I felt alarmed, it being what I had never before experienced.* At recreation I was asked what ailed me, and replied that I could not tell; but I described my feelings, and was told I was vapourish.

They were very desirous that week to know if my feelings were changed. I said they were, and endeavoured to make it appear to them that Satan had left me; but in reality I feared I should never escape from them, though I had determined to do so the first opportunity.

I was in the habit of talking in my sleep, and had often awoke and found the religieuses kneeling around my couch, and was told that they were praying for me. Fearing lest I should let fall some word or words which would betray me, I tied a handkerchief around my face, determining, if observed, to give the appearance of having the toothache, and so avoid detection. For some days I was not well, and my mind, as may be naturally supposed, sympathized with my body, and many things occurred that were to me unpleasant, which I shall pass unnoticed.

But what I have now to relate is of importance.

* I have since named the circumstances to a physician, who says it was fear alone.

A few days after, while at my needle in the refectory, I heard a carriage drive to the door of the convent, and heard a person step into the Superior's room. Immediately the Superior passed lightly along the passage which led to the back entry, where the menservants or porters were employed, and reprimanded them in a loud tone for something they were doing. She then opened the door of the refectory, and seemed indifferent about entering, but at length seated herself beside me, and began conversation, by saying, "Well, my dear girl, what do you think of going to see your friends?" I said, "What friends, Mamere?" Said she, "you would like to see your friends Mrs. G. and Father B., and talk with them respecting your call to another order." Before I had time to answer, she commenced taking off my garb, telling me she was in haste, and that a carriage was in waiting to convey me to my friends. I answered, with as cheerful a countenance as I could assume, "O, Mamere, I am sorry to give you so much trouble; I had rather see them here first." While we were conversing, I heard a little bell ring several times. The Superior said, "Well, my dear, make up your mind; the bell calls me to the parlour." She soon returned, and asked if I had made up my mind to go. I answered, "No, Mamere." She then said I had failed in obedience to her, and as I had so often talked of going to another order with such a person as Mary Francis, I had better go immediately; and again she said, raising her voice, "You have failed in respect to your Superior; you must recollect that I am a lady of *quality*, brought up in opulence, and accustomed

to all the lux-
very sorry
against her
which I did
they were th
lently, and a
go to the cor
to go to the
again rang, a
moments retu
ately what I
mised to prot
mind. She t
still in waitin
convinced the
G. and priest
out directly t
led to ask my
t some time
aid, "You c
you like ab
aid that my
wish to see m
upted by the
hen gave m
Mount Bened
y the next w
ained with

* My eyes w
ed had been t
ant life. I
as using some
ligieuses in c
t feel worthy

the refectory of the Superior passed to the back were emended tone for opened the ferent about beside me, "Well, my dear friends?" and she, "you and Father call to an answer, she me she was sitting to console as cheer- O, Mamere, noble; I had we were conversed several times. make up your flour." She made up my mere." She her, and as her order with ad better go raising her to your Superior a lady of accustomed

to all the luxuries of life." I told her that I was very sorry to have listened to any thing wrong against her dignity. She commanded me to kneel, which I did; and if ever tears were a relief to me, they were then. She stamped upon the floor violently, and asked, if I was innocent why I did not go to the communion. I told her I felt unworthy to go to the communion at that time.* The bell again rang, and she left the room, and in a few moments returning, desired me to tell her immediately what I thought of doing, for as she had promised to protect me for ever, she must know my mind. She then mentioned that the carriage was still in waiting. I still declined going, for I was convinced their object was not to carry me to Mrs. G. and priest B., to consult about another order, but directly to Canada. I told her I had concluded to ask my confessor's advice, and meditate on it some time longer. She rather emphatically said, "You can mediate on it if you please, and do as you like about going to see your friends." She said that my sister had been there, and did not wish to see me. Our conversation was here interrupted by the entrance of a novice. The Superior then gave me my choice, either to remain on Mount Benedict, or go to some other order, and by the next week to make up my mind, as it remained with me to decide. She then gave me a

* My eyes were opened: I found myself in an error, and had been too enthusiastic in my first views of a convent life. I was discontented with my situation, and was using some deception towards the Superior and the religious in order to effect an escape; therefore I did not feel worthy to attend communion.

heavy penance to perform, which was, instead of going to the choir as usual, at the ringing of the bell, to go to the mangle room and repeat "Ave Marias" while turning the mangle. While performing my penance, sister Martha left the room, and soon returning, said she had orders to release me from my penance, and to direct me to finish my meditation on the picture of a saint, which she gave me. But instead of saying the prayers that I was bidden, I fervently prayed to be delivered from their wicked hands.

They appeared much pleased with my supposed reformation, and I think they believed me sincere. The superior, as a test of my humility, kept me reading; that is, made no signal for me to stop, until the diet was over, when a plate of apple parings, the remnant of her dessert, was brought from the Superior's table, and the signal given for me to lay down my book and eat them.* I ate a few of them only, hoping they might think my abstaining from the remainder self-denial in me, and not suspect me of discontent or disobedience. I performed all my penances with apparent cheerfulness.

The Bishop visited the convent on the next holy day, and on their remarking that he had been absent some time, he made many excuses, one of which was, he had been engaged in collecting money to establish the order of the "Sisters of Charity" where the "Community" once lived; and he spoke of the happiness of the life of a "Religieuse" of this order. After he played on the piano, "Away with Melancholy," the Superior

* This was the second time I had been presented with apple parings by the Superior.

which was, instead of
 , at the ringing of the
 room and repeat "Ave
 e mangle. While per-
 r Martha left the room,
 he had orders to release
 l to direct me to finish
 ure of a saint, which she
 saying the prayers that I
 ayed to be delivered from

leased with my supposed
 they believed me sincere.
 ny humility, kept me read-
 al for me to stop, until the
 ate of apple parings, the
 as brought from the Su-
 gnal given for me to lay
 em.* I ate a few of them
 think my abstaining from
 in me, and not suspect
 obedience. I performed
 parent cheerfulness.

the convent on the next holy
 ing that he had been ab-
 de many excuses, one of
 en engaged in collecting
 order of the "Sisters of
 Community" once lived;
 business of the life of a "Re-

After he played on the
 elancholy," the Superior
 e I had been presented with
 or.

asked me to play, and the Bishop said, "By all means." I complied, but my voice faltered through fear, when Miss Mary Benedict apologized for me, by saying I had not practised much lately, on account of the Mother-assistant's engagements, and the young ladies occupying all the instruments. She showed the Bishop a robe which I had been busy in working for him. He said I must not on any account neglect my music. After telling one of his stories about a monk, who had disobeyed the rules of his order until Satan took possession of him, he left us, saying he hoped "Old Scratch" would not take possession of our hearts as he did that monk's, and hoped that we should never have another Judas in the community.

Some days after the conversation which I heard between the Bishop and the Superior while behind the altar, I was in the refectory, at my work, and heard the noise of the porters, who were employed sawing wood, and I conjectured the gate might be open for them. I thought it a good opportunity to escape, which I contemplated doing in this manner, viz. to ask permission to leave the room, and as I passed the entry, to secrete about my habit a hood which hung there, that would help to conceal part of my garb from particular observation; then to feign an errand to the infirmarian from the Superior, as I imagined I could escape by the door of the infirmary. This plan formed, and just as I was going, I heard a band of music playing, as it seemed, in front of the convent. I heard the young ladies assembling in the parlour, and the porters left their work, as I supposed, for the sawing ceased. I felt quite revived, and felt more

confident I should be able to escape without detection, even should it be necessary to get over the fence. I feigned an errand and asked permission of Miss Mary Austin to leave the room,* which she granted. I succeeded in secreting the hood, and the book in which Miss Mary Francis had left her address, and then knocked three times at the door which led to the lay apartments. A person came to the door, who appeared in great distress.†

I asked her where sister Bennet and Sister Bernard were; she left me to find them. I gave the infirmarian to understand that the Superior wished to see her, and I desired her to go immediately to her room. These gone, I unlocked and passed out by the back door, and as the gate appeared shut, I climbed upon the *slats* which confined the grape vines to the fence; but they gave way, and falling to the ground, I sprained my wrist. I then thought I would try the gate, which I found unfastened, and as there was no one near it, I ran through, and hurried to the nearest house. In getting over the

* Sister Martha (the sick religieuse) was scouring the floor at this time, which I saw was quite too hard for her. Not long after I left, I inquired after her, and learned she was no more.

† This was Sarah S. (a domestic,) who appeared very unhappy while I was in the convent. I often saw her in tears, and learned from the Superior that she was *sighing* for the *veil*. When I saw my brother, I informed him of this circumstance, and he soon found who she was, and ascertained that some ladies in Cambridge had been to see the Superior, who used to them pretty much the same language she did to my sister. I have since seen her. She is still under the influence of the Roman Church, but assures me that she did not refuse to see the ladies, as the Superior had represented to them, and she wept because of ill health, &c.

fences bet
and hurt
fell exhaus
soon as po
ed to enter
one answe
swer none
hausted.

As soon
tection, th
power. I
when I he
On looking
porters se
After searc
convent, an

While at
surprised,
so pale and

Notwiths
wrote a few
my friend,
did not wis
present con
clined his
the hands
end of my a
to convey m
me to say a
and wished
I resolved
time to me

* It will be
with what the

fences between the convent and this house, I fell and hurt myself badly. On reaching the house, I fell exhausted upon the door step; but rising as soon as possible, I opened the door, and was allowed to enter. I inquired if Catholics lived there; one answered "No." For some time I could answer none of their questions, being so much exhausted.

As soon as they understood that I requested protection, they afforded me every assistance in their power. I had been only a few moments there, when I heard the alarm bell ringing at the convent. On looking out at the window, we saw two of the porters searching in the canal with long poles. After searching some time, they returned to the convent, and I saw their dogs scenting my course.

While at that house, I looked in a glass, and was surprised, nay, frightened, at my own figure, it was so *pale* and *emaciated*.*

Notwithstanding my wrist being sprained, I wrote a few lines to Mrs. G., whom I still supposed my friend, begging her to come to my relief, for I did not wish my father and sisters to see me in my present condition. I thanked God that he had inclined his ear unto me, and delivered me out of the hands of the wicked. But here was not an end of my afflictions. Mrs. G. came in the evening to convey me to her house. She would not allow me to say any thing about my escape at Mr. K's., and wished me to return to the convent that night. I resolved not to go. After whispering a long time to me about the importance of secrecy, she

* It will be perceived that this does not correspond with what the Superior told my sister.

left Mr. K's., as we supposed, for home; but she soon returned, saying she at first intended to leave me at Mr. K's., but had concluded to take me home with her, as she desired some further conversation. Her manners appeared very strange, yet I did not distrust her friendship. Before leaving Mr. K's, she requested me to obtain for them a promise not to say any thing about my escape, which I did.

After I arrived at Mrs. G's., I showed her my wounds, and my feet, which had been frozen, and told her I did not find the convent what I had expected. She seemed to sympathize with me, and to do all in her power for my recovery. She did not then urge me to say much, as I was quite weak.

The next morning the convent boy on horseback came galloping up to the house, and delivered to Mrs. G. a letter from the Superior, and was very particular, as he said he had orders not to give it to any one except to her. She refused to tell me its contents, and sent directly for a chaise to go to the convent. She took with her the religious garb I had worn on my head, and the book containing Miss Mary Francis' name.* Meanwhile I endeavoured to compose myself, and wrote to Miss Mary Francis, agreeable to my promise, informing her of my afflictions, and of my reluctance to return to the bustle of the world. I proposed to her some questions, and requested her advice. I wrote that I could not think otherwise than

* This book I brought away, because Mary Francis had pricked hers and her father's *real* name out in it, and I wished to refer to it, in order to write her. I took it from my writing desk and slipped it into my pocket.

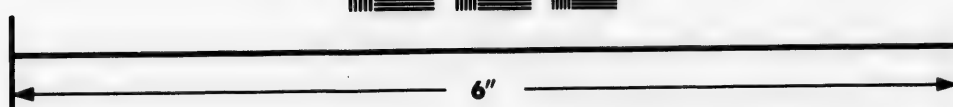
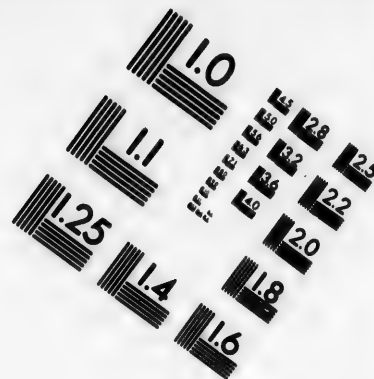
for home; but she first intended to leave included to take me and some further con- appeared very strange, friendship. Before stated me to obtain for any thing about my es-

s., I showed her my had been frozen, and convent what I had ex- apathize with me, and my recovery. She did ch, as I was quite weak. convent boy on horse- the house, and delivered the Superior, and was he had orders not to o her. She refused to nt directly for a chaise took with her the re- my head, and the book rancis' name.* Mean- apose myself, and wrote reeable to my promise, tions, and of my reluc- e of the world. I pro- as, and requested her ad- not think otherwise than

, because Mary Francis had real name out in it, and I er to write her. I took it pped it into my pocket.

that the Superior and Bishop were very wicked. I did not write much, thinking her confessor might advise her not to answer it, as it was probable that the Superior would write to him; and I was anxious to convince Mrs. G. that Mary Francis thought as I did, for Mrs. G. would not permit me to say one word against the Superior or Bishop; and I was resolved to ascertain if Mary Francis was living and happy. When Mrs. G. returned from the convent, she said the Superior had too exalted an opinion of me to think I would say any thing against the institution, and she had sent me a *present*, as she still considered me one of her flock; and if I had gone astray, she should do every thing she could for me, in a temporal as well as in a spiritual sense, if I would repent. My words were just these: "I cannot receive any present from the Superior; she is a wicked woman, and I do not believe her friendship pure." At this moment Priest B. drove to the door, and desired to see me. I did not think myself in danger, and conversed with him; but I soon found that he had seen the Superior and Bishop. He said, that as he was my sponsor, he considered it his duty to advise me, and hoped I was not going to break my *vows* to God, and *expose* myself to the world; because, if I did, I should be ridiculed and laughed at. He said he had before conveyed a novice to the "Sisters of Charity," and would convey me to them, or to some other retired place which I might choose, and that he was deeply concerned for my welfare. I told him I could not think of going any where then, as my health would not allow any exposure to the cold, and that Mrs. G. thought it best I





Photographic Sciences Corporation

**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**



should remain with her until I was better, when I should visit my father. He then exclaimed, "what letter is this?" taking up and reading the one I had written to Mary Francis. After reading it, he appeared surprised, and desired to know how I came in possession of her name. He said he should have seen me at the convent had he known I was discontented; and that if the Superior had done wrong, it was no reason I should do so, by speaking against the convent or those connected with it. He then shook hands with me, and said he would converse with me again when I was more composed, and left the house.

I soon began to suspect, by Mrs. G's manner, that she was not my friend, and that if she had an opportunity she would deliver me into the hands of the Catholics; for I learned from her little daughter, that her mother had given her to the Catholic church, because the Superior had offered to educate her free of expense, and that her mother was acquainted with the Superior before I went to the convent. Now, this I did not know before, and I began to be more guarded, and to fear that all belonging to the Romish church were alike. When I gave Mrs. G. the letter to send to the post-office, she asked if I was afraid she would break it open; and at another time afterwards, she told me I was afraid she would poison me, because I refused to take medicine, which I thought I did not need. Such thoughts did not occur to my mind.

In a day or two, Priest B. again came, and after much persuasion from Mrs. G., I consented to see him. At first he appeared very pleasant, said he had come to render me assistance, and begged me

as I value
advice. I
or advice
Cambridge
my religi
ed its foll
not at all
injured o
He affect
rent, and
had heard
sible that
made pub
I should
rather ret
scorn, tha
tyrant."
ed to retu
for all I c
tears of b
taken, if
secret tri
fess to n
prompted
if I woul
wanted to
I believe
rected) ta
as I belie
self in yo
turned pe
at the co

* He in
if I did not

as I valued my religion and reputation, to take his advice. I told him that I wished none of his assistance or advice; that I should go to my brother's, at East Cambridge, as soon as possible; that as respected my religion, I did not believe in one which justified its followers in doing wrong; and that I was not at all apprehensive that my reputation would be injured on that account by returning to the world. He affected considerable contempt for my aged parent, and ridiculed many things which he said he had heard of my father, and he said,* "Is it possible that a young lady wishes to have her name made public?" I answered, "You very well know I should shrink from such a thing, but I should rather return to the world and expose myself to its scorn, than remain subject to the commands of a tyrant." "Then," said he, "if you are determined to return to the world, you may go to ruin there for all I can do; and rely upon it, you will shed tears of blood in consequence of the step you have taken, if you do not repent and confess all at the secret tribunal of God." I told him I should confess to none but God, and that my conscience prompted me to do as I had done. He asked me if I would go with him to the Superior, as she wanted to see me. I replied, "No, I will not, for I believe you or any other Catholic would (if directed) take my life, were it in your power, as truly as I believe I am living, and I will not trust myself in your clutches again." At these words he turned pale, and asked me what I had seen or heard at the convent that made me think so. I refused

* He informed me I should be anathematized publicly, if I did not repent.

to say more, and retired at his exclamation that it would be *death* to me. Mrs. G. endeavoured to console me with the assurance that he meant right, and that it would, they feared, be death to my soul.

Mrs. G. afterwards accused me of endeavouring, at the time of my escape, to induce sister Bernard to leave the convent. The Superior sent me some articles of wearing apparel, which for a time I was obliged to accept. My sister called; she had been at the convent, and was informed that I was at Mrs. G's. She was overjoyed to see me, but much grieved because (as she thought) I had refused to see her at the convent. I endeavoured to calm her, and promised to explain all another time, assuring her my affection was not diminished and that I should soon visit her. I did not then explain to her the manner of my leaving the convent. It being late in the evening, she soon returned home. The Misses K. also called, and by their conversation I feared they would inform my father of my situation before I should be well and prepared to see him; and I did not wish to grieve him with a knowledge of what had taken place. Mrs. G. said she expected my father would rave at her for having advised me as she had done, if he should find me at her house.

A Catholic lady, who had stood my sponsor, and who brought a letter from Mary Francis,* called, and conveyed me to her house in Charlestown, where my father and brother soon found me, and desired I would return to my friends, which I did in the evening. Before leaving, however, I called on Priest B., and told him that I could never think

* This letter had been broken open.

of again at
reasons, a
their relig
I wished t
that he w
feelings to
the Romis
would refo
confessiona
not allow t
I could no
would be a
him that it
Superior a
compelled r
that I belie
me again in
chains whic
should alwa
self from th
be a Romis
Christ.

After I h
sent to me
which she s
dollars of th
considered a
note to M
receiving an
they would
belonged to
And now
y ability,
that fell un

of again attending the Romish Church, giving my reasons, and adding that I had been deceived in their religion, and in those who believed it; that I wished to take my leave of him, with the hope that he would not think I indulged any wrong feelings towards them, or that I desired to injure the Romish Church, but sincerely hoped they would reform. I told him this while he sat in the confessional. He remained unmoved, and would not allow that I had been treated ill. He said that I could not but know that the step I had taken would be a great injury to the convent. I assured him that it was not to be charged to me, but to the Superior and Bishop, who by their conduct had compelled me to take that step. I also told him that I believed it had been his intention to deliver me again into their hands, but I had broken the chains which bound me, and felt free; and that I should always be thankful that I had delivered myself from the bondage of what I should consider to be a *Romish yoke*, rather than the true cross of Christ.

After I had returned to my brother's, Mrs. G. sent to me by her little daughter some money, which she said I had given to the Superior. Five dollars of this sum, and some wearing apparel, I considered as not my own, and sent them back with a note to Madam St. George, stating that I declined receiving any thing from them as *presents*, but if they would return what wearing apparel, &c. *belonged* to me, it would be properly acknowledged. And now I have endeavoured, to the extent of my ability, to give a true and faithful account of what fell under my observation during my sojourn

among the Catholics, and especially during my residence at the monastery on Mount Benedict. And I leave it with the reader to judge of my motives for becoming a member of the Ursuline Community, and for renouncing it.

If in consequence of my having for a time strayed from the *true religion*, I am enabled to become an humble instrument in the hands of God in warning others of the errors of Romanism, and preventing even *one* from falling into its *snare*, and from being *shrouded* in its delusions, I shall feel richly rewarded.

SUPPLEMENT

TO

SIX MONTHS IN A CONVENT.



SUCH is the interesting and affecting narrative of Miss Reed, and, assuming its truth, excepting those few parts of it which she acknowledges in her notes to have been hastily and inaccurately recorded, it must be considered, *in its class*, as one of the most powerful appeals to the Protestant world against the absurdities and blasphemies of Popery that ever appeared in print. It has been generally objected in America, and will no doubt be so in England; that the artifice which the writer in her noviciate frequently practised, accord-

ing to h
Bishop, s
creased a
multiplie
narrative.
sympathy
having be
those, wh
who even
her good;
veracity up
because th
ed to relie
free and in
ture such in
But more
now put int
required by
necessary b
and spirit—
portance.
learning, if
there may b
who cultiva
industry an
expected in
ment, howe
condition o
America.
ettered sta
thought the
fort of mi
roach the
with regard

during my
Benedict.
of my mo-
noline Com-

time stray-
to become
of God in
anism, and
its snares,
one, I shall

VENT.

narrative of
th, excepting
knowledges in
accurately re-
class, as one
he Protestant
blasphemies of
It has been
will no doubt
ice which the
actised, accord-

ing to her own confession, on her Superior, the Bishop, and others, especially as her sufferings increased and her doubts of the good of the system multiplied, argues against the credit due to the narrative. That reader, however, must have little sympathy with a young sufferer, conscious of having been betrayed into a course of suffering by those, who pretended to be her best friends, and who even assumed to be the agents of heaven for her good; who can hastily impeach her general veracity upon this slight ground, and suppose that because the persecuted child now and then attempted to relieve her pains by misrepresentation, the free and independent woman can deliberately mature such incipient deceit into a volume of falsehood.

But more of this hereafter. Whether the book now put into the hands of English readers is one required by the state of the times—is one rendered necessary by any increase in the monastic system and spirit—forms a question of much greater importance. Convents once were seats of superior learning, if not scenes of superior devotion: and there may be individuals within their walls now, who cultivate the heart as well as mind with more industry and to better effect than could have been expected in any other mode of life. This argument, however, has lost its force in the altered condition of society, especially in England and America. The freedom of the press, and the unlettered state of literature at large, forbid the thought that from the cells of a monastery any effort of mind can proceed that shall rival or approach the production of modern letters. Then, with regard to religion—who does not perceive

that the present age differs as widely from the age of prosperous convents as any two periods of history on this subject can do. We are apt to forget that divine Providence materially diversifies the direction and operation of religious principle at different periods. At one time the passive and at another the active graces of the Christian are called forth. At one season private exercises of godliness, and at another its public effects are excited and required. Winter leads the sap down to the roots, while Summer calls it up into the branches, and displays it in the blossoms and the fruit ; and it is now Summer in the religious and the literary world, at all events in the two distinguished nations of the earth in which this book is making its wonderful way.

Admitting, as we perhaps must admit, that the more private and retired influence of religion in convents of their best days was superior to the devotion of the generality of modern Christians, we still avow with confidence, that modern Christians excel in public spirit and active zeal and charity. If it be said that these are qualities put forth by the Catholic advocates of convents, as well as the Protestant opponents of them, we answer that while the zeal and charity of the former are exclusive even to bitterness, these qualities in the latter are as expansive as the wants of mankind, as diffusive as the limits of the inhabited world. When the river spreads wide, or flows in various fertilizing currents, it cannot be expected to roll so deep. Among even Protestants of a century and half ago, and farther back, we discover a strong propensity to exclusion, almost to the degree of

the Catho
of the glo
it became
circled the
same time
the active
plified by
own souls-
lar church
while it too
the present
scene ; an
convened f
sincerity an
we hear th
be filled wit

These re
with the ob
seasonable p
to accomplish
England, to
fall in comp
and strive b
use their sy
would be v
they are aim
he very wo
constrained
centuries, be
tion to pul
ade by Pro
ey are pri
th inmater
multiply

the Catholic world; and if the Catholics had any of the glory of true devotion shining around them, it became excelled by the greater glory which encircled the heads of the recluse Puritans. At the same time, how little do we find even in them of the active and wide spreading benevolence exemplified by the best men of modern times! Their own souls—their own families—their own particular churches—these drew forth their concern, while it too much narrowed and restricted it. But the present day exhibits a remarkably altered scene; and from a thousand public assemblies, convened for the very purpose, and evincing their sincerity and fervency by their sacrifices and efforts, we hear the exclamation—"Let the whole earth be filled with his glory."

These reflections are perfectly in accordance with the object which Miss Reed, strives, by the seasonable publication of her striking little work, to accomplish. Did the Catholics of America and England, to say nothing of those of other countries, fall in completely with this altered state of society, and strive by open and public efforts alone to diffuse their system and multiply their proselytes, all would be well. But in addition to such efforts they are aiming to perpetuate, or rather to revive, the very worst parts of a system which they are constrained to acknowledge has for ages, if not centuries, been declining in public favour. In addition to public efforts, as zealous as any that are made by Protestants, though much more Sectarian, they are privately endeavouring to fill the convents with inmates, after striving with too much success to multiply the number of those worse than doubt-

ful institutions. All the priests of America and England could not have effected one quarter of the advantage which the Papal system has recently gained in these countries, had it not been for this simultaneous movement of private and public zeal. A recent writer informs us that whereas in America somewhat more than forty years ago, there was only one Romish church; there are now twelve Catholic sees, and a Catholic population of six hundred thousand, worshipping in about four hundred churches! Could this vast increase, so far beyond the ratio advance of inhabitants in the United States, have taken place without the exercise of an influence much more powerful than an open and candid appeal to the judgment of the people by public discourses and printed arguments?

This success will the less surprise every reader who considers the great influence of females, especially religious females, in society, and who remembers that this is the sex for which the institutions now denounced and deplored are very chiefly established. For one individual of the other sex induced to spend his days in the seclusion of a monastery, one hundred females may be found willing or constrained to enter the precincts of a convent. When we call to mind the power which mothers have over their children, in connection with the depth and strength of the impressions made upon them at that early and tender age, it is impossible not to look with fearful apprehension on any material increase of establishments tending to remove the rising race of females from society, and accustom them to habits utterly unfitting for domestic life. This must even be felt in reference

to such course, t
ter the s
them. V
their live
ation to a
of general
as possible
at the sam
regret, tha
earth shou
useless by
To retur
credit to wh
former ages
ligion is cor
were seldom
who might
But in such
States this s
work like
s way in so
Catholic sys
artment of
pounced. I
ublished to
e individu
rned in th
cribe, well i
n is genera
rowful ind
sh reverence
ould be the
present co

to such as may be expected, after a conventual course, to forfeit their rash and early vows, and enter the state for which God and nature designed them. With reference to the rest, who either spend their lives in seclusion, or emerge with a determination to adopt as few of the maxims and manners of general society, even of a Christian character, as possible, we entertain a different set of feelings; at the same time feelings involving even greater regret, that the fairest portions of God's image on earth should be marred and rendered almost totally useless by mistaken notions of his own will.

To return to Miss Reed's publication, and the credit to which that lady is entitled. Catholics of former ages, and in countries which so far as religion is concerned they almost claim as their own, were seldom anxious to refute or to answer any one who might happen to impugn their proceedings. But in such countries as England and the United States this silence is neither politic nor safe; and a work like Miss Reed's left unanswered to make its way in society, would be a dangerous foe to the Catholic system, especially to that mysterious department of it which she has witnessed and denounced. It is not often, that, when answers are published to attacks like this, they are put forth by the individuals personally and immediately concerned in the affairs in question; some other scribe, well instructed in the mysteries of the system is generally employed, who discovers deep and powerful indignation that those whom he holds in high reverence for their superior wisdom and piety should be the objects of wanton assault. But in the present case, from its nature and peculiarities,

it was necessary that the person most complained of—the Superior of the convent—should appear in her own defence, and step for once from her rigid seclusion into the arena of controversy.

This she has done; and at some future time we may possibly give to the public an edition of her little work. But at present we must confine our attention to Miss Reed, and while we examine her general claims to public confidence, must take some notice of what she advances in defence of her bold and approved assault. It must be manifest to every one that much was said by the Superior and the Bishop, when Miss Reed first entered the convent, tending apparently to leave her at perfect liberty to make her own deliberate choice. In some portions of the narrative those great and grave personages even seem to throw early discouragements in her way, and almost to dissuade her from becoming a recluse. How far this was done to prepare for such a contingency as her escape, and for the defence of a system against an attack like hers every reader must judge. On a comparison of her early indulgence and the candour of her first treatment, with the gradual harshness she met with, and the severities she soon found practiced on such as had been some time in the convent, we are constrained to infer that the Bishop and Superior had long been convinced of the necessity of such art to constrain young females of the present day to submit themselves to their control.

Feeble instruments, as they appear, have often been the occasion of great and important changes in society. Miss Reed, should she prosper, as she has to some extent already, in diminishing the in-

fluence of female of talents, with mask big with signs face of the peccation is charged time convey may lead like a death book itself defence of motives in Supposing Magdalene cold and h creature w pared with tial than a to repel th doubt can far towards upon the sy tion in par In a sup is a passag counting in position to she candid institution, experienced a tendency. was no do

fluence of the system she denounces, is not the first female of obscure origin and slender resources and talents, whose efforts to overthrow tyranny and unmask bigotry and hypocrisy, have been crowned with signal success. Yet there is nothing in the face of the narrative which would imply her expectation of any great and important result. She is charged with an attempt to destroy the Benedictine convent, and it is quite possible that her book may lead to its ultimate dissolution; but nothing like a design or a hope of this sort appears in the book itself; and in a statement since published in defence of the work she expressly disclaims all such motives in publishing it.

Supposing the narrative respecting Miss Mary Magdalene to be correct, what must be said of the cold and heartless cruelty with which that meek creature was treated! Unless the Superior is prepared with something more direct and circumstantial than a fierce and flat denial of the whole affair, to repel this part of Miss Reed's accusation, no doubt can be entertained of this alone going very far towards bringing down the public indignation upon the system generally as well as the institution in particular.

In a supplement to Miss Reed's Narrative there is a passage, in which she is represented as accounting in a very rational manner for her first disposition to enter the convent, and in which, also, she candidly disclaims all intention to injure that institution, except as a plain statement of facts experienced and witnessed by herself may have that tendency. "I have never wished to conceal that I was no doubt mistaken in thinking a romantic

spirit, and the grief and affliction which followed the death of my mother, were a religious zeal for seclusion from the world. My feelings have from infancy been easily affected, and in going into the convent as I did, every one must see that I was influenced more by imagination than by judgment. I now wish others, who may be influenced as I was by false views of things, to understand the real nature of convents. I am sure I have only told what took place there, and have in no case exaggerated it. If what takes place in a convent ought to be approved, and induce Protestants to send their children there, then I have done nothing that could injure it, but would help it with the public. I would merely ask whether, if what I saw and heard was wrong, and yet was concealed from the public by the Community, I have done wrong in telling it in the manner I have, and in allowing it to be published, after my name was brought before the public in order to condemn me. This reflection relieves my mind from the pain I should otherwise feel at the reproaches of the Superior in her answer. I do not feel that I have deserved them. While I was at the convent at first, my imagination was wrought up to the highest; and believing the Roman Catholic to be the only true religion, I was zealous to persuade all others to embrace it; but I never wished to take a cross, and go through the streets of Boston, making known the true faith, as the Superior represents. I believe my friends will admit that I never, on any occasion, conducted, or wished to conduct myself, in that manner."

It appears that one great inducement to Miss

Reed's
her acco
man, of
house o
habit of
that "h
ducing h
have me
accustom
to give
Catholic
some que
tion fixed
—and to
ledge tha
any chang
wondered
mind shou
on the de
tions towa
parent app
that if she
holy than
to it." S
and acted

The of
sample of
exerted by
increase,
lytes to th
be found
nomination
house, wo
to convert

Reed's early determination to enter a convent, was her accidental intercourse with a French gentleman, of the name of Rodique, who boarded at the house of a married sister whom she was in the habit of visiting at Boston. She candidly confesses that "he had much influence on her mind in inducing her to join the Catholics." He seems to have met her in another Catholic family she was accustomed to visit—to have resorted to her father's, to give her instruction in the principles of the Catholic faith and discipline—to have adopted some questionable methods to preserve her attention fixed on what he deemed an important object—and to have done all this in the face of a knowledge that her father and family were adverse to any change in her religion. It is scarcely to be wondered that a naturally romantic and susceptible mind should, under such tuition, and immediately on the death of her mother, have turned her affections towards a convent—especially as her dying parent appears to have left this as her last request, that if she could discover any other church more holy than the Protestant, she would unite herself to it." She thought the Papal church more holy, and acted accordingly.

The officious interference of M. Rodique is a sample of the minute, individual, incessant zeal, exerted by Catholics of all classes and countries, to increase, if but one insignificant individual, proselytes to their community. Very seldom would it be found that a Protestant gentleman of any denomination, accidentally lodging at a citizen's house, would take much pains, or any pains at all to convert a young and inexperienced relation of

his hostess to the peculiarities of his own faith. But here we have a Catholic gentleman, availing himself of the first intimation that a young protestant girl might be induced to become a convert to Popery, if not, industriously endeavouring to excite the first disposition towards such a change in her immature mind !

This conduct was the more reprehensible as well as remarkable on account of the studied secrecy with which it proceeded to its purpose. The father of Miss Reed, it is incidentally admitted, knew of his visits to his daughter, and disapproved of them ; while he either feared or felt himself unable to prevent them. M. Rodique was a lodger, and we believe a boarder, at the house of his married daughter, and he might hesitate to do any thing that should offend him. At all events, though he once threatened to forbid him the house, if not turn him out of it, he never appears to have adopted either the milder expedient or the more formidable extremity. But even these visits were unknown to the sister of Miss Reed, at whose house the officious emissary dwelt ; and though in his conversation with her and her husband, the subjects of Catholicism and Convents often arose, he was cautiously silent about them in reference to their young and romantic sister.

Now what would be said, even by such an one, of a Protestant gentleman thus searching out the retreats of a young girl, and keeping his movements as secret as possible from those who were likely to prevent them ? No imputation beyond a religious motive ever seems to have been entertained against this Catholic zealot ; and yet such

conduct
have f
the ex
though
the ob
arities
worshi
the Bis
to pros
over.
sister a
her fir
Theresa
which s
have gr
agent M
family n
the Bish
influenc
becca.
admonit
impress
ing wit
Catholic
taining
ties of
These
back to
band—
the No
proper f
did she
Even
were, w

conduct, had he been a Protestant, would scarcely have failed to bring down upon him the reproach, the execration, due to a purposed seducer—even though he had pleaded zeal for the conversion of the object of his pursuit to the important peculiarities of his creed, and observances of his religious worship. Another ingenious device employed by the Bishop (Fenwick, we believe, was his name), to proselyte this young female, must not be passed over. It should be observed that she had an elder sister already with the Catholics, named, either in her first Protestant or her second Popish baptism, Theresa, after the patroness saint of the order to which she belonged; and this circumstance must have greatly encouraged both the Bishop and his agent M. Rodique to hope that another of the family might yield to their sway. In this hope the Bishop obtained—likely through his lay friend's influence with the family—an interview with Rebecca. Then he addressed her in terms of solemn admonition, which she acknowledges very deeply impressed her conscience and heart, and in parting with her, said—"We shall make a good Catholic of you,"—lending her two volumes containing a *Tale*, with which the Catholic peculiarities of faith and worship were artfully blended. These volumes were almost immediately taken back to the Bishop by Mr. Pond, her sister's husband—a circumstance that goes far to prove that the *Novel* they contained was not deemed quite proper for a young girl to read. Very reluctantly did she consent to their being returned.

Even these devices, however, skillful as they were, would in all probability have failed, but for

an early and avowed predisposition to Popery and to a convent life in Rebecca's mind. On the other hand, we cannot wonder, that, having heard of this disposition and the frank and public avowal of it, the Bishop should make the usual effort of his fraternity to gather this feeble unsuspecting lamb into the Catholic fold. But who can overlook the character stamped on the system of proselytism, by the almost infancy of the age, amidst which even a Bishop and an elderly lay gentleman deem it their duty to beat up for recruits. Did we find them labouring in their vocation exclusively, or chiefly, among those whose years enable them to judge for themselves, and to embrace with calm deliberation, if they embrace at all, the mysterious discipline of the Romish Church, little of animadversion would be left for a critic of their proceedings to publish. These grave personages, however, in despair of success among adults, are seen casting their baits among mere children; and by craft, when they cannot do it by force, removing them from parental control, shutting them up in a prison, and interposing their assumed authority between them and all their natural protectors, and their most faithful and affectionate friends. All efforts to render others religious and moral are best made at an early age.

"Children like tender osiers take the bow,
And as they first are fashion'd always grow?"

But the efforts before us are made to change the religion of children, and that at the expense of at least one branch of moral obligation—to the breach at least of one precept of the moral law—the one standing at the head of the second table, and what

is emphasised by the promise—efforts so reserved about to coming persons.

In the fiction is named a known part of the on the Rebecca's certain Reed, not the latter own defence George, not only the part the inst exposing geance—the devo

We are severely duct. vent, like could section of anger completely

is emphatically called *the first commandment with promise*—"Honour thy father and mother." Such efforts should, in all candour and conscience, be reserved for an age in which parental authority is about to cease, and the individuals assailed are becoming masters of their own judgment as well as persons.

In the narrative of Miss Reed's seclusion, mention is frequently made of Mary Francis, thus named after she entered the convent; but before known as Miss Kennedy, and spoken of in an early part of the volume as having moved from Boston, on the arrival of a domestic at the house of Rebecca's father in search of her. We have read certain letters of this young lady addressed to Miss Reed, never intended for publication, but which the latter has been constrained to publish in her own defence against the reproaches of the lady St. George, the Superior of the convent. There is not only an apparent breach of confidence here on the part of Miss Reed, but she becomes by this act the instrument—a reluctant one she confesses—of exposing her young friend to the Superior's vengeance—if such an evil emotion can find place in the devout bosom of a lady Abbess.

"*Tantene animis celestibus ira?*"

We are not anxious either wholly to justify, or severely to censure this part of Miss Reed's conduct. The sufferings of Mary Francis in the convent, like her own, had already been great, and could scarcely be increased by any further infliction of the Superior's anger or malice. But this anger and malice always appear to have been completely under the control of a mind of singular

potency and policy. The Superior could behave towards her pupils, whenever she pleased, and it would better answer her chief purpose, with well dissembled kindness and great condescension of manners; and the probability is, that this more gentle and winning character became assumed towards Miss Kennedy, the better to sustain the trembling reputation of the convent amidst the storm which Miss Reed was evidently able to raise against it. There is reason to believe that Miss Kennedy, on the appearance of her letters, was removed to another convent, if not afterwards to a third. Her name, too, was changed from *Mary Francis* to *Mary Paulina*—for what motive the reader must judge, and with what success may be inferred when it is known that her parents were Catholics, and therefore not only disposed to approve of her treatment, but also to acquiesce in these pious artifices to deceive the public respecting her.

Miss Kennedy writes like a good Catholic as well as a friend to Miss Reed. Her admission of what was wrong in the convent is an admission of abuse of what in itself she considers perfectly right. "Do not"—she says—"let any thing you have seen disgust you with our holy religion." "Has not our Lord said that scandals must come? can ought but a good thing be abused, or a holy thing profaned?" "Forgive me for presuming to preach; I am so anxious for you to make the best use of your sufferings." "May they make you more pleasing to the divine Saviour of mankind." "You have, my dear Agnes, unfastened the golden link which rivets, more closely than any other,

soul to s
loved an
has durin
ges in yo
me. 'I
is the on
this your
happy me
lowed alt
found cri
and in so
chosen a
Did not
Come, wh

A rem
from wh
Reed's P
of all her
and of ab
confess w
should ha
full with
plain stat
cit. We
dence in
general in
struction
of myster
her trials
to the ins
so clearly
itself evil
occasional
think the

soul to soul and heart to heart ; but you are still loved and interesting to me. Oh, dear one, what has during these few months made such sad ravages in your heart. Reflect on your observation to me. 'I am convinced that the Catholic religion is the only true one.' Can you bury in oblivion this your own fervent protestation ? and also the happy moments passed before that religion's hallowed altars ? Have you abandoned it because you found crime and deceit in some of its professors and in some of its ministers ? Was not one of the chosen apostles of our divine Redeemer a traitor ? Did not our Lord say 'scandals must come ?' Come, where ? In the church, undoubtedly."

A remark or two on these extracts. The letters from which they are made are deemed by Miss Reed's Protestant friends remarkably confirmatory of all her charges of severity against the Superior, and of abuses and cruelties in the convent. We confess we see no such confirmation in them. We should have believed Miss Reed's charges to the full without them, and perhaps our faith in her plain statement would even have been more implicit. We do not mean that they weaken our confidence in her special accuracy any more than in her general integrity ; but they put so sacred a construction on her sufferings—they throw such an air of mystery and even sublimity over the scene of her trials—they evince so profound an attachment to the institution amidst all its abuses—they show so clearly what one young person may revile as in itself evil, another may advocate as only sustaining occasional evil abuse,—that we are inclined to think that Miss Reed's friends, and that young

lady herself, would have done her cause quite as much good by withholding as by publishing them.

It is also next to impossible for us to look over these letters and not ask—*Is not the hand of Joab in all this?* May not even the Superior's influence, if not the Bishop's aid, be detected in most of what Miss Francis writes? The fine turns of expression which the letters contain—the clever appeals they make to Miss Reed's judgment and conscience as well as heart—the vague indefinite language in which some abuses are admitted—the opening left for a stranger to infer that these abuses regarded the system of Popery generally rather than convents in particular—the insinuations that while the Catholic religion admits abuse, *as the purest system on the face of the earth*, its conventual holy places furnish a retreat from the danger, and involve no other suffering than what is calculated to obviate the far worse evil of sinning,—these go far towards convincing us that whatever apprehensions the chiefs of the convent entertain from Miss Reed's statement, they cherish not a moment's fear from the letters of her more Catholic and consistent friend.

This view of her letters, however, enhances the indignation with which we contemplate the discipline of these nurseries of superstition. They are not conducted and controlled by ignorant zealots who know not what they do; but by shrewd and discerning politicians, who are capable of turning almost every incident into an occasion of defence. Their motto is—*The end justifies the means*; and having given their end the most exalted character—having settled the point, at least with themselves,

that the
stop at n
no effort
advance
earth.
ance of t
conversion
it; and
divine an
tions and
way, and
triumphin
Another
Miss Reed
the conver
time befor
school in
whose nan
initials—t
doubt of t
an accredi
members
which the
tor. It is
Miss Reed
brodery a
perior tast
ledged pro
as which
in making
under the
lessons exc
This, we
knowledge

that their system is infallible and divine—they stop at no expedient however crafty, they withhold no effort however humiliating and censurable, to advance a cause paramount to every other upon earth. Their settled duty to God is, the furtherance of the Catholic religion; and to man is, his conversion to this religion and this furtherance of it; and to these two branches of what they deem divine and infallible legislation, all human connections and courtesy, propriety and feeling, give way, and they boast of an honourable victory in triumphing over and trampling upon them.

Another resort for sustaining the integrity of Miss Reed, and the fidelity of her evidence against the convent, has been made by her friends. Sometime before she entered it, she had been at a school in Boston, under the care of two sisters whose names do not appear further than in their initials—the Misses S..... There can be no doubt of their respectability as superintendants of an accredited and talented seminary, and also as members of the episcopal church in Boston, of which the Rev. Dr. Crosswell is the esteemed pastor. It is to be regretted that the instruction of Miss Reed in this school was restricted to embroidery and needle-work, for which she had a superior taste, and in which she became an acknowledged proficient. A little volume is now before us which says that "she was particularly expert in making lace, then much in fashion; but while under the care of the Misses....., she took no lessons except in needle-work."

This, we repeat, is to be regretted. It is acknowledged that "she was far from being ignor-

ant; appeared as intelligent as most young ladies of her age, and always conversed with correctness and propriety. "Her mind"—the volume goes on to say—"appeared very capable of improvement." Why then, we naturally ask, was not her mind improved in this Protestant school, and by teachers so capable of effecting the desirable and easy work? why was it left in its imperfect incipient state to receive its improvement, if such it might be called, in a Catholic Seminary, and through the discipline of a convent? Why was this tender sapling removed from a garden of free air, in which it already grew and flourished, to be transplanted to a foreign forcing house amidst all manner of stunted, and crooked, and useless exotics? "She often expressed a wish," we are told, "to enter the convent that she might *complete her education*." Now, without putting any bar upon her entering a convent, when she came of an age to form an enlightened and deliberate judgment, let us ask why did not her numerous and zealous friends somehow contrive to let her *education be completed* before her entrance, and thus give her the chance, at least, of choosing not to enter at all?

The testimony of these Protestant sisters, whose tuition of Miss Reed was so strangely limited to manual ingenuity to the neglect of intellectual studies, and so far as it appears even of religious lessons, expressly confirms all that has been said of the influence of M. Rodique over her mind in favour of Catholicism. This gentleman, they acknowledge, "met her at their house at the time she was talking of going into the convent, and proposed to introduce her to the Bishop!" Nay,

he appeared
the Bishop
We sh
circumstan
those wh
who testi
who thus
the instit
but why
long at a
been awa
suffering
thing of t
her to the
her arriva
being allo
with her i
prayer bo
must have
the Bible
neither o
wantonl
culiarly fa
arresting
the Bishop
was not pl
appeared
that interv
a favourabl
remonstran
a tide in h
at the flood
when M. R
hand and r

he appears to have taken her from their house to the Bishop's residence ! !

We should not lay the stress we do on these circumstances, were not the ladies volunteers among those who rejoice in her escape from the convent, who testify in favour of her charges against it, and who thus far appear on the stage as adversaries of the institution. We applaud their zeal in all this ; but why did their zeal slumber so much and so long at an earlier period, when they ought to have been awake and active in preventing the six months suffering that Miss Reed underwent, ~~for~~ nothing of the Catholic reproach that will now follow her to the grave, and perchance somewhat hasten her arrival there. They pleaded, indeed, for ~~her~~ being allowed to take her Bible and prayer book with her into the convent : but when told that her prayer book must not accompany her, and that she must have no other than the Catholic version of the Bible, they discover no emotion, they make neither opposition nor protest. Nay, they seem wantonly or wilfully to neglect an opportunity peculiarly favourable for changing her mind and arresting her progress. Her first intercourse with the Bishop was not satisfactory to herself. " She was not pleased with his conversation ;" and " she appeared less disposed to go to the convent after that interview than she had done before." What a favourable juncture this for a strong and united remonstrance from her Protestant friends ? What a tide in her affairs which they might have taken at the flood ? where was Dr. Crosswell at this time, when M. Rodique and the Bishop were so near at hand and ready for action ?

We ask these questions more in sorrow than in anger, and with the purpose of warning other parents and teachers, other patrons and friends of young females who are exposed to the insidious snares of Popery, either from the restless vigilance of its emissaries, or the romantic disposition of their own minds. The entire affair before us shows, what must often have appeared on other evidence before our readers, that Catholic ceremonies and sentiments have a remarkable tendency to impress in their favour, minds of this cast. In Protestant countries we daily witness the effect of religious display and parade on such persons, and how much more powerful is *their* attraction than that of the simple and solemn performance of Christian worship! In Protestant and enlightened England, what multitudes are attracted by public meetings and platform exhibitions, and how delighted they are with those parts of the chequered affair in which the ridiculous forms the nearest possible coalition with the sublime! Urge them more frequently to attend the usual week-night services of their several ministers, and they will plead their want of time; but let some more novel and exciting scene be advertised, at another and distant place of worship, and time can easily be found for attendance an hour earlier, and two hours later! Moreover, money can be spared for the collection, and every kind of sacrifice can be endured for the sake of witnessing the show and listening to the speeches of such an occasion, by multitudes who have no sympathy with their own *dear* deserted minister, and no taste for his plain week-night sermons and prayers!

Is the wonder i
than in A
ton and C
rapid inc
ple so we
by the we
we astoni
natural tr
not a hun
eagerly pa
enchantin
ed, to rece
A most r
Popery, if
opposition
its enlight
years ago
other moti
been advan
taken of th
Protestant
An impo
costume, a
spectable f
estate; wh
possessor,
His public
hotel, and
of the city
abode, crea
a large port
ture his ann
tion, to beco

Is the success of Catholic zeal, then, a matter of wonder in the present day in England any more than in America—in London any more than in Boston and Charlestown? Can we be surprised at the rapid increase and effort of that zeal, amidst a people so well prepared for its meretricious embrace by the weak inventions of Protestant folly? Are we astonished to hear that so many, trained for the natural transit at a gay and noisy Protestant chapel, not a hundred miles from Finsbury, should so eagerly pass over to the still more pompous and enchanting temple that modern Popery has furnished, to receive and welcome such butterfly saints? A most remarkable instance of this Protestant Popery, if we may thus associate terms of sworn opposition, took place in a city distinguished by its enlightened institutions and inhabitants, a few years ago. It is not mentioned here with any other motive than to confirm the truth of what has been advanced, and illustrate the views which are taken of the tendency of much that takes place in Protestant assemblies to further the Catholic cause.

An impostor of singular attractions in person, costume, and speech, gained access to several respectable families as the heir of a noble title and estate; which have since, by the death of the then possessor, descended to their rightful expectant. His public addresses, first from the balcony of his hotel, and afterwards in almost every public room of the city in which he had taken up his temporary abode, created such an interest in his favour, that a large portion of the constituency hailed with rapture his announcement at the eve of a general election, to become a candidate for the representation,

in opposition to two excellent members, who expected to be returned for the third time without opposition. While his popular talents and speeches, with a large share of assumed philanthropy and seeming condescension of manner, gained him several thousand followers among the lower orders, no small number of religious and respectable persons of all denominations, were delighted with his warm avowals of attachment to religion; and some were even willing to make any sacrifice in their power for his advancement to the very head of the political and religious institutions of the place.

Among his admirers was a lady who conducted a respectable boarding school, and who had deemed it an honour to receive a poor child under her protection, which he had just before, for some reason of his own, thought fit to receive as his own *protege*. The little girl was placed among her scholars, and the patron was always a welcome visitor at the school. In fact, he became the idol of the institution, and the venerated friend of its respectable conductress. Special and extraordinary visits were at length arranged, and one took place marked with peculiar importance, not only by its religious character, but by the solemn preparations that preceded, and the novel scenes and ceremonies that attended it. A central seat was elevated and adorned for the distinguished guest: and report says that a splendid canopy was placed over it. On either side, but on a level with the floor, were chairs tastefully arranged for the governess and her mother, on the left and right hand of the presiding genius of the evening; and for their inferior visitors and the teachers of the school, on the right

and le
were o
ral sch
young
an otto
and add
ed title
pectant
an elega
the refr
dresses
with mo
than any
ever rec
followed
ing, we
spoke, at
as a rum
And w
Not cert
over the
honoured
after con
caped tra
ity; whi
lunatic as
ed transp
scene is c
and remo
among P
and respe
use of th
whose mo
of this wo

and left of them. The other parts of the room were occupied in most admired order by the several scholars and their young friends; while the young protege, beautifully dressed, was placed on an ottoman at the feet of her illustrious benefactor and adopted father, who was saluted by his assumed title of Sir William, and congratulated as an expectant earl! Before him was a handsome table, an elegant cushion, and a superb Bible; and after the refreshments of tea and coffee, he delivered addresses and offered prayers, which were listened to with more profound attention and fervent applause, than any one of the forty clergymen of the city ever received. What ceremonies or amusements followed, beyond a little sacred and profane singing, we are not with certainty informed. Rumour spoke, at the time, of a dance, but we mention it as a rumour, and not as a reality.

And why have we described the scene at all? Not certainly to dwell upon, still less to rejoice over the fate of the individual thus exalted and honoured. The assumed Sir William was soon after convicted of swindling and perjury, and escaped transportation by a successful plea of insanity; which has, however, given him a place in a lunatic asylum, at least for the period of his intended transportation, and perchance for life. But the scene is described for the purpose of admonition and remonstrance. Where there is a disposition among Protestants, and Protestants of education and respectability, to make on any occasion this use of their religion—this parade of a system whose motto is that *the kingdom of Christ is not of this world*—are not all the young people, espe-

cially the young females, who witness such scenes, and behold their parents and teachers, and even *pastors*, delighted with them, more than prepared at the first opportunity, if not to enter a convent, to become members of the so called holy and infallible community of Rome?

To return, perhaps for the last time, to our first subject. Miss Reed's narrative is said to have acquired a vast and increasing circulation in America, and it will no doubt be very generally read in this country. Let it be so—not merely or chiefly to remunerate a spirited publisher, or the publishers of any other edition, for their cost and care; but, above every other consideration, to render the fair authoress as general a benefit as she can become to the rising age of the Protestant world. Her primary object appears to have been the justification of her conduct in clandestinely escaping from the convent; and the purpose of her friends, in the support they have come forward to give her testimony and character, is chiefly the refutation of what they deem the selfish and slanderous answer which her narrative provoked from the Superior. But let our principal purpose, in giving a British circulation to these interesting facts, and by which we are aiming to illustrate them, be the benefit of those churches, and families, and individuals, to whom we are united by a common bond of Protestant sentiment and feeling. Far, very far, let our thoughts be removed from the least intention to inflame the public mind—already, perhaps, too much heated—against the Superiors or subordinates, the priests or the people, of Catholic churches. But this evil may be shunned without

proce
the d
weak
ramp
their
under
tate,
let it
the R
munit
mere c
line an
sacred
Popery
power
the me
of tho
name—
the pen
deed to
their p
tributin
idolatry
seem to
the cha
the gos
they cla
for hum
of, the
death, e
such th
in scrip
must be
Speci

proceeding to the other extreme of indifference to the danger of Protestant youth, especially of the weaker sex, from the restless ambition of a once rampant, but now fallen hierarchy, to substitute in their warm affections the traditions of men for the undefiled gospel of "the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords." For let it never be lost sight of, that the contest between the Romish church and the various evangelical communities which *protest* against it, is not one of mere circumstance and ceremony—of mere discipline and authority—but of religious principle, of sacred and essential truth. The foundation of Popery and the faith of Papists stand, not in the power of God, but in the wisdom of men—not in the merits of Christ, but in the works and virtues of those who borrow in order to blaspheme his name—not in the blood of the Covenant, but in the penances and prayers of those, who profess in deed to be his disciples, but deny him the glory of their purification and redemption. Without attributing to Catholics the absurd and besotted idolatry which the objects they bow before would seem to deserve for them, it is sufficient to support the charge of their departure from the true faith of the gospel, and the spiritual worship of God, that they claim in any sense and in any degree a merit for human doings, superadded to, or independent of, the merit of Christ—"His obedience unto death, even the death of the cross." There is no such thing in existence. The thought is exploded in scripture, and the assumption in whatever form must be abhorrent to all right Christian feeling.

Specious advocates for convents have pleaded

thus—"The works performed in those retreats of piety, at all events, bear no resemblance to the pharisaic works censured by our Lord, which were wrought ostentatiously *to be seen of men.*" Still they may partake, and we fear do partake, of the fullest essence of a self-righteous character, being done for a purpose, if possible, more adverse to Christian principles, and therefore more displeasing to God, than ostentation and display—to propitiate divine favour and purchase heavenly blessedness. Those whose religion ostentatiously invites the public gaze, and whose chief object is human approbation and applause, excite pity for their weakness and vanity, and are finely satirised and dismissed by the only encouragement that divine liberality can bestow upon them—"Verily, I say unto you, ye have your reward." But those take more presumptuous ground, and are guilty of greater impiety, who conclude that, by an ingenious system of penance and seclusion, they can either effect that for themselves which the death of Christ alone accomplishes, or can add by their own sacrifices to the value and virtue of his atoning death !

Such efforts to expiate human guilt, and mortify the passions of a corrupt nature, supposing them to be approved or tolerated by God—which is impossible—have no utility, and consequently no moral worth, as public examples tending to the general good. The ostentatious self-righteous man may, in many respects, be an useful one in society. While the principles of his conduct are concealed and do no injury, his actions may do considerable good—often more good from the forward zeal with which

they
public
clusio
are of
qualiti
ety of
design
while i
ture an
in prom
govern
ducing
christia
tance an
would n
This
the last
of her c
more or
whom in
control
the evil
too heav
escape fr
pears in
plaints o
secret si
hope and
the mela
ageous a
other evi
experien
Miss Ree
the bond

they are multiplied and forced as it were on the public attention. But the system of monastic seclusion, while its presumption and self-confidence are offensive to God, has none of the subordinate qualities of utility among men. Nay, it robs society of the benefit which all personal religion is designed, and adapted, and required to render; while its only relative effect is, from its very nature and necessary operation, painfully injurious, in promoting some of the worst feelings in both the governing and governed towards each other—inducing the one to a severity at variance with both christian and natural feeling, and the other to resistance and reluctant compliance whenever resistance would not prevail or dare not appear.

This is remarkably manifested from the first to the last of Miss Reed's narrative. The six months of her conventual life was one continued contest, more or less in action, between her and those to whom in an evil moment she had yielded up the control of her conscience and conduct. Nor was the evil confined to *her*—who soon felt the yoke too heavy for her to bear, and resolved on an early escape from the intolerable thralldom; but it appears in a more affecting form in the private complaints of her less resisting companions—in their secret sighings and murmurings, who had not the hope and dared not cherish the wish to escape from the melancholy prison house. In these less courageous and more submissive disciples, we see another evil tendency of the system, not elicited and experienced, at least for any length of time, by Miss Reed. She early broke the yoke and burst the bonds asunder, and now appeals openly to the

world for the justification of her conduct; but they privately complain of hardships and cruelties which they have not the courage to surmount and scarcely the conscience to disapprove. Without charging them with direct hypocrisy, in professing to submit with Christian patience to what their heart and soul must sometimes think strange, if not evil, it is enough to show that they are restless and unhappy—that, however they may be striving to “learn of Him who was meek and lowly in heart,” they are far from feeling the yoke they wear as *His* to be *easy*, or the *burden* they are told *He* imposes upon them to be *light*.

We look on these, and other *moral* evils that wider space would enable us to record, as some of the worst tendencies of the system which we cordially unite with Miss Reed in denouncing. At the same time, it is impossible to be silent on the pernicious influence which the education of Protestant children in Catholic schools must have on their present and future *religious* character. The writer of these pages has witnessed, in different parts of Europe, what the American friends of Miss Reed apprehended is widely diffusing its baneful consequences in that country. He has seen, in France and Flanders especially, the modern *rage*, as it may be called, of Protestant parents for the education of their sons in the colleges and their daughters in the convents of the Romish church. At Burges, Ghent, and St. Homer especially, he found large numbers of Protestant English children availing themselves, under their parents' sanction, of these opportunities, and thus, for the sake of a good French education, resigning at once all their native patriotic and Protestant feelings. To attend the routine of such schools, and not imbibe daily and hourly the very spirit of the religion they are established to propagate, is impossible. Either, therefore, our Protestant countrymen and countrywomen are

indiff
acqui
abilit
sessio

Can
tablis
or tha
at var
system
throw
have
ten no
then i
ferred
quency
to the
ly cere
rents,
ship, a
allowe
service
contine
world

Here
a proli
ingent
hibitin
not ha
lay and
rangen
religio
the Er
they c
prise
dull m
atile, a
all oth

indifferent to what religious character their children acquire, or they calculate too confidently on their ability to counteract, in after life, youthful prepossessions in favour of Popery.

Can it be expected that the Superiors of these establishments will forego their favourite ceremonies? or that they will allow exemptions and innovations at variance with the assumed pre-eminence of their system? or that they will neglect the opportunities thrown in their way by thoughtless Protestants, who have not the same zeal for their peculiarities, and often no zeal at all, of adding to their converts? What then is the consequence? The children thus transferred become regular attendants on the singular frequency of Catholic worship, and thus early converts to the system; or, after six days attendance on weekly ceremonies, they spend the sabbath with their parents, either in the total neglect of all religious worship, at which they are taught to shudder, or being allowed one reluctant attendance on a Protestant service, always cold enough in England, and on the continent proverbial for its heartless formality and its worldly indifference!

Here the reader is conducted most unwittingly to a prolific spring of the evil now deplored. If human ingenuity had tasked itself to devise a plan for exhibiting Protestantism in an unpopular light, it could not have succeeded better than our countrymen, both lay and clerical, have done in their ecclesiastical arrangements. More dull uninteresting services of a religious nature never were witnessed, than those of the English in the several continental towns in which they congregate. It has been matter of some surprise that French vivacity could ever tolerate the dull music of Catholic worship—that a people so volatile, and fond of the liveliest airs and movements in all other places, can listen for hours together to the

droning monotonous tones of the best cathedral choirs. But in the English churches there is no music at all; neither instrument nor voice is heard in the praise of God; nor is there any thing else adapted to kindle in the bosom a single spark of appropriate cheerful devotion.

Contrasted with these lifeless services, Catholic churches all around present scenes of stirring attraction to the eye if not to the ear, and young persons especially, are not backward in acknowledging the difference, nor anxious to forego seasons of cheap and welcome excitement, for the mere sake of perpetuating a formal respect for the religion of their own country. Through this cause alone, not a few English young ladies residing on the continent annually become decided and acknowledged converts to the Romish church; and many more renounce Protestant services altogether, and, if they observe public worship at all, observe it in a Catholic temple.

Aware of this continued chance of winning our children "to the obedience of *their* faith," Catholic priests, in towns to which English families resort, are ever on the watch. Without imputing to them improper motives, every one on the spot must observe them evincing a politeness of behaviour, joined with official zeal and vigilance, which Protestant ministers would do well in a better cause to imitate. The writer of these pages resided in a large French city about twelve months, for the improvement of his two daughters in the language, and he had occasion to notice the watchful temper of the priesthood in this respect. His younger daughter, a mere child, heard much from her French teacher of the excellence of a certain young priest, who, in fact, was universally esteemed by Protestants as well as Catholics. The teacher also had spoken to him of what she was pleased to call her favourite pupil. A respectful

mess
the p
house
pany
was l
She l
tinua
house
forego
his fa
have
compl
his vo
Magd
Her
and th
evils l
Ameri
way ch
Suppo
familie
amenit
taliate
tholics
to prom
faith,
marke
in fav
the bit
bad en
zealots
cised v
decisio
In
will b
recomp
the C

message was one day delivered by the teacher from the priest, requesting that on her next visit to his house her little scholar might be allowed to accompany her. The child herself was anxious to go, and was highly delighted with his addresses and presents. She has now been sometime in England, but continues to speak with rapture of her reception at the house of Monsieur M——. Nor can her parents forego this opportunity of bearing their testimony in his favour. They are persuaded that he never would have sanctioned the severity of which Miss Reed complains, and would have been the first to lift up his voice against the cruelties inflicted on Miss Mary Magdalene.

Here, some will plead, there is the greater danger; and that families are more safe from innovation amidst evils like those which Miss Reed has exposed in America, than from the more plausible and pleasant way chosen by the French to effect the same purpose. Supposing this to be admitted, the duty of Protestant families in defeating that purpose is, to imitate the amenity of our European neighbours, rather than retaliate on the harshness and inhumanity of the Catholics of the new world. While caution and restraint, to promote our childrens' fidelity to the Protestant faith, are conducted with a temper like that which marked Monsieur M....'s efforts to conciliate them in favour of Popery—while they are unallied with the bitterness and unstained by the vice, which are bad enough in Catholics, but worse in Protestant zealots—such caution and restraint cannot be exercised with too much vigilance and wisdom, too much decision and perseverance.

In this light Miss Reed's interesting narrative will bear the strictest investigation. It is not a recompensing evil for evil. It is not measuring to the Catholics the measure which they have too often

been ready to mete to the Protestants. Her candid admission of all the good treatment she received, and her equally candid admission of the respect and even reverence, with which those young inmates of the convent who suffered much more than herself, returned to those who so cruelly treated them, shows a temper in this young writer vastly superior to that with which Catholic vices and crimes are too often recorded, especially by those who have suffered under them. The very worst thing we have heard spoken of Miss Reed—always excepting the vindictive and vituperative answer of her Superior—was a remark to this effect. "Perhaps this young lady was averse to remaining in an institution which would compel her to continue in single blessedness. Perhaps she had "examined well her blood," and discovered that she could not long "endure the livery of a nun ;"

"For aye to be in a shady cloister mew'd,
To live a barren sister all her life,
Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless moon."

Perhaps she had identified herself with Milton's lady, and heard the fine and fascinating address of Comus—

"List, sister, be not coy, and be not cozen'd
With that same vaunted name virginity.
Beauty is nature's coin, must not be hoarded,
But must be current, and the good thereof
Consists in mutual and partaken bliss,
Unsavory in th' enjoyment of itself :
If you let slip time, like a neglected rose
It withers on the stalk with languish'd head."

Should this surmise of our heroine's motives be just, we will not censure her—we dare not cast either the first or the last stone upon her. To violate a vow—supposing her to have taken it, which is itself a violation of nature and religion—is a virtue to be ex-

toll'd
denn
—clea
part
sancti
desig
the di
huma
which
own c
silenc
of all
mere
Sho
insinu
of any
examp
of the
he mar
had es
self, h
gave p
ments
which
moral
religio
This
another
most f
cially
is on t
as virt
at first
that w
aloth
as we
pacific

tolled rather than a vice to be reproached and condemned. To assert the supremacy of the divine will—clearly intimated in creation—forming an essential part of the machinery of divine Providence—and sanctified as well as sanctioned by every dictate and design of Christianity :—to assert the supremacy of the divine will, thus commended, over every edict of human authority, is acting a noble Christian part, which, however it may have a direct aspect on our own comfort, ought not to be laughed or frowned to silence, as though the selfish feature of it robbed it of all its goodness and beauty, and reduced it to a mere paltry subterfuge for individual private interest.

Should Miss Reed require support under such an insinuation, greater than this argument or argument of any kind can furnish, she may appeal to no less an example than the wife of Martin Luther—nay, to that of the great reformer himself. The young lady that he married—Catherine Boren—had been a nun, and had escaped from a Saxon convent : and Luther himself, by his marriage, especially with such a lady, gave pointedness and force to all his previous arguments against the Catholic law of monastic celibacy, which had then reached the consummation of its immoral abuses, as well as of its lofty pretensions to religious authority.

This accidental allusion suggests a few remarks on another feature of the *expose* of Miss Reed. The most fertile source of moral evil is indolence, especially when it becomes systematic and secluded. It is on this account that great examples of vice as well as virtue are not so productive of imitation as might at first be expected. The fact is, there are hundreds that want energy, for one that wants ambition, and sloth has in this respect prevented vice in some minds as well as virtue in others. Idleness is the grand pacific ocean of life, and in that stagnant abyss the most

salutary things often produce no good, and the most noxious no evil. Abstract vice, however, may be and often is, engendered in idleness; though the moment it becomes efficient it must quit its cradle and cease to be idle. In monasteries and convents, therefore, all who admit our nature to be radically corrupt will expect to find the seeds and roots of evil to abound—to be feeble in their strength owing to a restricted mode of life, and the want of space for expansion and exercise—still to abound in luxuriance and variety.

Amidst this evil of monastic seclusion, there is no substantial good to compensate or counteract it. Admitting it to have some salutary influence on those who submit to it, "not by constraint but willingly, not for filthy lucre, but with a ready mind," that influence reaches not beyond a very narrow circle. There are undoubtedly some to be found in all ages and in most countries, who have experienced all the calm delight and satisfaction they expected and professed—whose feelings have been raised and kept above the world by perseverance in strict and solemn devotion—who have "sat in heavenly places," and have partaken of emotions and enjoyments beyond the power of language to describe. All this is possible, and by no means improbable.

But how narrow has been its widest range, and how insignificant its greatest influence on society! Private and secluded devotion is of infinite value as the main spring, the moving cause, of an active piety and a wide spreading beneficence: but such piety as this—never coming forth into public action, and scarcely known by the mass of mankind to exist—is as restricted in its social influence, as it is productive of personal superstition, and surrounded and sustained by local corruption. Were this piety in itself as undefiled as its names and pretensions would imply—were it always the vestal inviolable devotion which it

assur
wh
—its
nicel
ment
essen
held
major
it in
ture,
self is
crop
churc
can s
those
ture
think
unall
prerog

Ap
the be
toms
that r
to the
of tha
One o
cribes
accou
ments
the to
spicuo
kissin
in the
remen
little
face t
floor,

the most
ay be and
moment
d cease to
efore, all
t will ex-
ound—to
cted mode
a and ex-
riety.

ere is no
et it. Ad-
on those
willingly,
" that in-
ow circle.
n all ages
ed all the
and pro-
and kept
nd solemn
aces," and
hts beyond
is is possi-

range, and
on society!
e value as
active piety
ph piety as
ction, and
to exist—is
productive
nd sustain-
in itself as
uld imply—
ion which it

assumes to be—were it holy as the fires of heaven, whence alone it professes to be inspired and inflamed—its limited and concealed character would not be nicely weighed against it: but its evil accompaniments, so generally attending it as to prove almost essential to its existence, will always prevent its being held in very high reputation, and render an immense majority of the wise and good as averse to encourage it in others as to adopt it themselves. As in agriculture, he that can produce the greatest crop for himself is not the best farmer, but he that can render his crop the best at the least expense; so in the Christian church, they are not the most valuable members who can acquire for themselves the greatest good, but those who can accomplish this with the least admixture of concomitant ill. For let none presume to think that they can devise any plan of producing good unalloyed and unadulterated with evil. This is the prerogative of GOD alone.

Apart from the moral evils, more or less corrupting the best religion of convents, there are ridiculous customs and ceremonies which, to say the least, debase that religion, and tend, in the view of young converts to the system, to make it appear a perfect caricature of that sublime reality which the scriptures render it. One of the pupils of the Boston convent thus describes its discipline in which Miss Reed's previous account is perfectly borne out. "The usual punishments of the school were making a young lady sit on the top of a high pyramid, or flight of steps, in a conspicuous place; putting their feet in the stocks, and kissing the floor. All these punishments I have seen in the school. The kissing the floor I particularly remember seeing in three cases. One case was my little sister, whose fault, I believe was making up a face to a young lady. She was ordered to kiss the floor, and complied. Another was a niece of one of

the teachers, a Catholic; and the third a little Protestant girl about six years old. These punishments were inflicted in the presence of all the school. Kissing the floor was considered to be one of the punishments to mortify those who had broken the rules."

One or two remarks on this quotation. It is acknowledged that such was the discipline of the convent *schools*. It is, however, manifest that, so far as was practicable, it was the discipline of the entire convent. Its early exercise on the youngest scholars, Protestant as well as Catholic, was evidently intended to prepare them, in the event of their re-entering or remaining in the convent as *religieuses*, for submission either to the same rules, or to rules still more ridiculous and severe. A second remark suggested by the quotation regards the powerful hold which, with all its known evils, the system must have held of the good opinion of surrounding parents. This young lady acknowledges that she "went there with reluctance, because her elder sister, who had been a pupil for a long time, had left it several times, and came home much dissatisfied; but her friends persuaded her to return!" Yet, amidst this dissatisfaction and these escapes of an elder daughter, and the consequent and natural reluctance of a second daughter to enter the forbidding place, not only did the latter enter and continue there three months longer than Miss Reed, but a younger sister also was sent to kiss the floor, in token of her subjection to a scholastic plan, as absurdly redundant in punishments, as it was glaringly deficient in imparting sound tuition in letters, morals, or piety. Such was the infatuation of parents in favour of the convent, that their children were thus successively forced into it, and compelled to remain, notwithstanding they themselves were forbidden to witness the manner in which they

are t
youn
"T
saw n
lour,
from
occasi
My si
see th
only p
the pu
frequ
Tyler,
not re
to acc
ladies
rents i
knew
rooms

Nor
that le
ed the
greate
a rule
parent
letter
of the
their
reache
"it w
not co
that a
and
person
with
shoul
We

are treated. Thus stands the record of the same young lady.

"The whole time I was in the convent I never saw my friends any where except in the visiting parlour, which was separate from the school-room and from the community of nuns. No visitors on any occasion were allowed to go into the school-room. My sister and another lady once called expressly to see the school-room, but they were refused. The only persons I ever saw in the school-room, except the pupils, were the Superior and nuns, the Bishop frequently, two priests, Dr. O'Flaherty and Mr. Tyler, and I think our other priest whose name I do not recollect. The school-room was sufficiently large to accommodate a number of visitors. The young ladies all knew that they could not invite their parents into the school-room on any occasion. I never knew any of the parents to visit either the sleeping-rooms or the dining-hall."

Nor is this all. There can be little doubt, not only that letters from their parents sometimes never reached the pupils, but that letters from the pupils were in greater numbers withheld from the parents. It was a rule of the convent for every pupil to write to her parents in the middle of every month; but as each letter thus written was placed unsealed in the hands of the Superior, much uncertainty prevailed about their being despatched, and no small number never reached their destination. This young lady remarks, "it was against the rule to receive a letter which did not come through the Superior. It was understood that all letters addressed to the pupils were opened and read by the Superior, before they reached the persons to whom they were addressed. It rested with the superior whether any letters we had written should reach our friends or not."

We find it time to bring these desultory, yet we

hope appropriate and seasonable reflections to a close. Their object has been to preserve the reader, especially the young reader, from those errors of the day which are most likely to "corrupt them from the simplicity that is in Christ." If those alone who, by countenancing and scattering these corruptions, "sow to the wind, reaped the whirlwind," our regret would not be so great, nor our anxiety for the rising youth of the land so intense. But the mischief is, that the blindness of bigotry seeks its victims chiefly amidst the innocent and unoffending. The cottage is sure to suffer for every error of the church. When corruption occupies the seat of authority, whether ecclesiastical or political, and proceeds from sources to which the young are taught in their earliest lessons to look with respect, it may be compared to that torrent which originates in the mountain, but commits its devastations in the vale. One important rule should perpetually govern us—to bring every thing, antiquity as well as novelty, to the light of revealed truth. Mystery magnifies danger, as the fog does the sun. The hand that unnerved Belshazzar derived its most horrifying influence from the want of a body; and death itself is not so formidable in what we know of it as in what we know not. Had Miss Reed understood these things in early life, she had never entered the Ursuline Convent.

45



781618

X

2

to a close.
er, especi-
of the day
from the
ne who, by
ions, "sow
egret would
sing youth
is, that the
efly amidst
age is sure
When cor-
ether eccle-
sources to
iest lessons
to that tor-
out commits
portant rule
every thing,
of revealed
the fog does
azzar derived
nt of a body;
that we know
ss Reed un-
ad never en-

